# Sensitivity Analysis and Robust Optimization 

# A Geometric Approach for the Special Case of Linear Optimization 

by

Jiyoung Im

A thesis<br>presented to the University of Waterloo in fulfillment of the<br>thesis requirement for the degree of<br>Master of Mathematics<br>in<br>Combinatorics \& Optimization

Waterloo, Ontario, Canada, 2018
(C) Jiyoung Im 2018

I hereby declare that I am the sole author of this thesis. This is a true copy of the thesis, including any required final revisions, as accepted by my examiners.

I understand that my thesis may be made electronically available to the public.


#### Abstract

In this thesis, we study the special case of linear optimization to show what may affect the sensitivity of the optimal value function under data uncertainty. In this special case, we show that the robust optimization problem with a locally smaller feasible region yields a more conservative robust optimal value than the one with a locally bigger feasible region. To achieve that goal, we use a geometric approach to analyze the sensitivity of the optimal value function for linear programming ( $\mathbf{L P}$ ) under data uncertainty. We construct a family of proper cones where the strict containment holds for any pair of cones in the family. We then form a family of $\mathbf{L P}$ problems using this family of cones constructed above; the feasible regions of each pair of LPs in the family holds strict containment, every LP in the family has the unique optimal solution at the vertex of the cone and has the same objective function, i.e., every $\mathbf{L P}$ in the family shares the same optimal solution and the same optimal value. We rewrite the LPs so that they reflect the given data uncertainty and perform local analysis near the optimal solutions where the local strict containment holds. Finally, we illustrate that an $\mathbf{L P}$ with a locally smaller feasible region is more sensitive than an $\mathbf{L P}$ with a locally bigger feasible region.


## Acknowledgements

I would first love to express my deepest gratitude to my advisor, Henry Wolkowicz. Having him as my advisor was the luckiest thing that ever happened to me throughout my academic career. He is the most patient person I have ever met. He never laughed at my silly questions or answers. He consistently allowed this thesis to be my own work, but guided me in the right direction and threw the right questions whenever he thought I needed.

I would also like to express my gratitude to my family for providing me with continuous encouragement throughout my study. I especially want to express my love to my significant other, William Yeung. He is always there for me through ups and downs. No words can describe his unlimited emotional support and countless meals he has cooked for me.

## Table of Contents

List of Tables ..... vii
List of Figures ..... viii
1 Introduction ..... 1
1.1 An Elementary Example ..... 2
1.2 Notations ..... 3
2 Preliminaries ..... 4
2.1 Convex Analysis Background ..... 4
2.1.1 Convex Sets ..... 4
2.1.2 General Cones ..... 7
2.1.3 Polyhedral Theory ..... 10
2.2 The Generalized Gradient ..... 16
2.3 Linear Programming ..... 20
2.4 Linear Robust Optimization Theory ..... 21
2.4.1 Definitions ..... 22
2.4.2 Reformulation of $\mathbf{L P}$ with Box Uncertainty ..... 23
2.5 Linear Sensitivity Analysis ..... 27
3 Construction of Cones and the Properties of Constructed Cones ..... 30
3.1 Generating the Polyhedral Cones ..... 30
3.1.1 Construction of Generator $c$ in a Two-Dimensional Subspace ..... 30
3.1.2 Building a Polyhedral Cone ..... 30
3.1.3 Properties of the Constructed Cone ..... 34
3.2 Properties of Two Sets of Interests ..... 42
3.2.1 Relations between $\{y: C y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\}$ and $\{z: D z=\bar{w}, z \geq 0\}$ ..... 42
3.2.2 Relations between $\left\{y: P^{T} y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\}$ and $\left\{z: Q^{T} z=\bar{w}, z \geq 0\right\}$ ..... 45
4 Sensitivity of Optimal Value Function ..... 55
4.1 LP Models ..... 55
4.2 Primal and Dual Optimal Solutions to $(\mathcal{P})$ and $(\mathcal{Q})$ ..... 58
4.2.1 The Optimal Solutions to $(\mathcal{P})$ and its Dual ..... 59
4.2.2 The Optimal Solutions to ( $\mathcal{Q}$ ) and its Dual ..... 61
4.3 Properties of the Optimal Value Functions ..... 63
4.4 The Strict Monotonicity and Sensitivity of the Optimal Value Function: Nondegenerate Cases ..... 65
4.4.1 Known Results on Parametric LP: Nondegenerate Cases ..... 65
4.4.2 The Monotonicity and Sensitivity in Nondegenerate Cases ..... 67
4.4.3 The Robust Optimal Value Function $\phi(\epsilon)$ ..... 72
4.5 The Sensitivity of the Optimal Value Function: Degenerate Cases ..... 72
4.5.1 The Generalized Directional Derivative ..... 73
4.5.2 The Directional Differentiability of $\psi(\epsilon)$ ..... 77
4.5.3 The Sensitivity of the Optimal Value Functions $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ and $\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$ ..... 81
4.5.4 A Sufficient Condition for Differentiability of $\psi(\epsilon)$ at $\epsilon=0$ ..... 82
4.5.5 The Robust Optimal Value Function $\phi(\epsilon)$ ..... 85
4.6 Interpretations to the Robust Optimization Problem ..... 86
5 Numerical Result ..... 88
6 Conclusions and Further Notes ..... 90
References ..... 93
Index ..... 96

## List of Tables

2.1.1 Conic duality . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 13
2.1.2 Starting from $K=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{a^{i}\right\}_{i \in I}\right)$, we can convert $K$ as an intersection of
halfspaces. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 15
2.5.1 Hierarchy in LP postoptimal analysis suggested by Arsham and Oblak [2]. Parametric analysis is often referred as sensitivity analysis. . . . . . . . . . 28

## List of Figures

1.1.1 The optimal value function $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ is associated with the region filled with diagonal lines on the LHS. We note that $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ yields bigger function values than $\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$. ..... 3
2.1.1 A convex set with four extreme points in $\mathbb{R}^{2} .\left(\frac{1}{2}, 0\right)^{T}$ is an interior point of $S$. ..... 6
2.1.2 An illustration of a cone base in $\mathbb{R}^{3}$ : The shaded region is a cone base of the given cone ..... 8
2.1.3 The shaded region is cone $\left(\left\{a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}\right\}\right)$. ..... 9
2.1.4 A non-degenerate cone(LHS) and a degenerate cone(RHS) in $\mathbb{R}^{3}$. ..... 11
2.1.5 The solid black lines represent $P=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{a^{1}, \ldots, a^{4}\right\}\right)$ and the red dashed lines represent $P^{*}=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{p^{1}, \ldots, p^{4}\right\}\right)$. ..... 14
2.2.1 A function that is locally Lipschitz at 0 , but not locally Lipschitz near 0 ..... 17
2.2.2 A nonsmooth function on $\mathbb{R}$. ..... 19
3.1.1 Given $\bar{w}$ and $w^{\prime}$ satisfying $\left\langle\bar{w}, w^{\prime}\right\rangle=0$ : construction of $c$ such that $\langle c, \bar{w}\rangle=$ $\cos \theta$. ..... 31
3.1.2 The cone constructed in $\mathbb{R}^{3}$ from the given data in (3.1.4). ..... 32
3.1.3 arccos function ..... 34
3.1.4 Construction of vector $d^{i}$ moved further from $c^{i}$. The figure on the right is an example in $\mathbb{R}^{3}$, where the dashed line and the solid line represent cone $(\mathcal{C})$ and cone $(\mathcal{D})$, respectively. ..... 39
3.2.1 $l$ is the line segment between $\bar{w}$ and $d^{j}$ and $T$ is the trajectory from $\bar{w}$ to $d^{j}$. ..... 47
3.2.2 An illustration of a 2-dimensional subspace in $\mathbb{R}^{3}$. $d^{2}$ is in cone $\left(\left\{d^{1}, l(\bar{\lambda})\right\}\right)$. ..... 48
3.2.3 $z$ satisfies $\langle z, \bar{w}\rangle=0, z \in \operatorname{span}(\{p, \bar{w}\})$ and $\langle p, z\rangle>0$. ..... 49
3.2.4 $p^{i}$ is rotated further from $\bar{w}$ than $q^{i}$. ..... 51
4.1.1 An illustration of cone $(\mathcal{C})$ and its negative polar cone in $\mathbb{R}^{2}$. ..... 56
4.1.2 An illustration in $\mathbb{R}^{2}$ : The shaded region is the feasible region of the original
cone. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 57
4.1.3 Two cones in (b) are translations of the cones in (a). . . . . . . . . . . . . 58
4.5.1 An illustration of two functions $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ and $\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$ : Note that two functions cross at the origin. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 84
5.0.1 Fix $\epsilon=10^{-3}$; changes in robust optimal value $\psi(\theta)$ w.r.t. changes in $\theta$. . . 88
5.0.2 Fix $\epsilon=10^{-3}$; changes in robust optimal value $\phi(\theta)$. . . . . . . . . . . . . . 89
5.0.3 Two cones cone $(\mathcal{C}) \subset$ cone $(\mathcal{D})$; changes in $\psi_{P}(\epsilon), \psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$ with $\epsilon \in\left[10^{-10}, 10^{-2}\right] .89$
5.0.4 two polar cones cone $(\mathcal{C})^{\circ} \supset \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})^{\circ}$; changes in $\phi_{C}(\epsilon), \phi_{D}(\epsilon)$ with $\epsilon \in$


## Chapter 1

## Introduction

Suppose that we want to solve an uncertain linear programming problem (LP), i.e., a linear program with uncertain data; and, we are given bounds for each element of the uncertain data. We want to obtain the best possible optimal value in the presence of data uncertainty. Robust optimization handles such linear programming problems. Robust optimization tries to find the best uncertainty(perturbation)-immunized solution with given uncertainty set. Given a linear programming problem, we call an optimal value with no uncertainty involved a nominal optimal value and call an optimal value with uncertainty involved a robust optimal value.

We sometimes obtain a robust optimal value that is very close to its nominal optimal value. In this case, data uncertainty does not play a big role in terms of determining its optimal value. In this thesis, we want to study the question of why a robust optimal value may be so well behaved. Similarly, we may obtain a robust optimal value that is far from its nominal optimal value and want to answer the question of why a robust optimal value may be poor, more precisely why it is too conservative. We show that the behaviour of robust optimal value is related to the local geometric structure of the problem. For this, we construct a family of LPs that share the same objective function and the feasible regions are of the same structure. At the same time, we have control over the sizes of the feasible regions.

We achieve the goal of this thesis via sensitivity analysis. Sensitivity analysis tries to answer how sensitive the optimal value/solution is to small changes in one or more of the parameters/data of the original problem. We first consider an uncertain linear programming and formulate its robust counterpart. We then show that the resulting robust counterpart can be written as a parametric $\mathbf{L P}$. We analyze the sensitivity of the optimal value function of the parametric form of the robust counterpart. Intuitively speaking, we want to show that if a nominal optimal solution is determined at a sharp corner of the feasible region, then its robust optimal value is more sensitive than the case where the nominal optimal solution is at a fatter corner.

The topic of this thesis lies in the intersection of the polyhedral theory, robust optimization, parametric linear programming and sensitivity analysis.

This thesis is organized as follows: For the rest of this chapter, we introduce an elementary example and some notations. In Chapter 2, we introduce some definitions and lemmas that we need in the later chapters. In particular, the polyhedral theory and the robust optimization will be extensively used in the later chapters. In Chapter 3, we present how we build polyhedral cones so that we can control their sizes. We then study properties of the cones constructed above. We also study relations between two sets based on the cones generated above. In Chapter 4, we present the main results of this thesis. We first define two classes of LPs we wish to study their sensitivities. We consider two classes of LPs such that the part of their feasible regions are the cones constructed in Chapter 3. In Chapter 5, we experiment the result presented in Chapter 4. In Chapter 6, we conclude the results presented in this thesis, limitations and further work.

### 1.1 An Elementary Example

We observe the following example.
Example 1.1.1. Define the following two families of $\boldsymbol{L P s}$ where $E$ is the matrix of ones and $\epsilon \in[0,0.1]$ :

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left.\begin{array}{lll} 
\\
(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, P))
\end{array} \quad \psi_{P}(\epsilon)=\quad \min \quad l \bar{w}, x\right\rangle, \begin{array}{l}
\text { subject to }
\end{array} \\
& x \geq 0, \\
& \psi_{Q}(\epsilon)=\quad \min \quad\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle \\
& (\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, Q)) \quad \text { subject to } \quad(Q-\epsilon E) x \geq q \\
& x \geq 0,
\end{aligned}
$$

where

$$
\bar{w}=\binom{0}{1}, P=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
-\frac{\sqrt{3}}{2} & \frac{1}{2} \\
\frac{\sqrt{3}}{2} & \frac{1}{2}
\end{array}\right], Q=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
-\frac{\sqrt{2}}{2} & \frac{\sqrt{2}}{2} \\
\frac{\sqrt{2}}{2} & \frac{\sqrt{2}}{2}
\end{array}\right], p=\binom{\frac{1-\sqrt{3}}{2}}{\frac{1+\sqrt{3}}{2}}, q=\binom{0}{\sqrt{2}} .
$$

Figure 1.1.1a shows the feasible regions of $(\mathcal{R}(0, P))$ and $(\mathcal{R}(0, Q))$. We note that the feasible region of $(\mathcal{R}(0, Q))$ contains the one of $(\mathcal{R}(0, P))$.
$(\mathcal{R}(0, P))$ and $(\mathcal{R}(0, Q))$ both have the same optimal value and the same optimal solution, which are 1 and e, respectively. However, for $\epsilon \in(0,0.1]$, we have the following relation:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{P}(\epsilon)>\psi_{Q}(\epsilon) \tag{1.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

For example, if $\epsilon_{1}=10^{-10}$ and $\epsilon_{2}=10^{-2}$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\psi_{P}\left(\epsilon_{1}\right) \approx 1+4 \cdot 10^{-10} & >1+2.828 \cdot 10^{-10} \approx \psi_{Q}\left(\epsilon_{1}\right), \text { and } \\
\psi_{P}\left(\epsilon_{2}\right) \approx 1+5 \cdot 10^{-1} & >1+3.29 \cdot 10^{-1} \approx \psi_{Q}\left(\epsilon_{2}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Figure 1.1.1b shows the computational result of (1.1.1). In this example, we observe that

(a) The feasible region of $(\mathcal{R}(0, P))\left(\right.$ b) $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)>\psi_{Q}(\epsilon), \forall \epsilon \in(0,0.1]$ contains the one of $(\mathcal{R}(0, Q))$.

Figure 1.1.1: The optimal value function $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ is associated with the region filled with diagonal lines on the LHS. We note that $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ yields bigger function values than $\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$.
the optimal value of $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, P))$ is more sensitive to its change of data than the optimal value of $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, Q))$.

We relate the sensitivity of the optimal value functions to the dual optimal solutions of the given LPs. We will show in Chapter 4 that $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ is more sensitive than $\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$, since the nonzero coordinates of the dual optimal solutions of $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, P))$ is bigger than the ones of $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, Q))$.

### 1.2 Notations

We first explain some notations used in this thesis. We use these notations without further explanations in later chapters. We extensively use the definitions from [1, 10, 25].

To represent a part of a matrix, we follow Matlab notations. For example, given a matrix $A, A(:, j)$ denotes the $j$-th column of a matrix $A$. Similarly, $A(i,:)$ denotes the $i$-th row of a matrix $A$. Given a subset of column indices of $A, A(:, \mathcal{I})$ denotes a submatrix $A^{\prime}$ of $A$ such that columns of $A^{\prime}$ are columns of $A$ associated with $\mathcal{I}$. The rank of $A$ is denoted by $\operatorname{rank}(A)$.

Given a set $X$, we denote $X^{\perp}$ the orthogonal complement of $X ; \operatorname{int}(X)$ denotes the interior of $X$ and relint $(X)$ denotes the relative interior of $X$. The null space of $X$ is denoted by null $(X)$.

We use superscript to denote various vectors. For example, we write $w^{i}$ to denote different vectors in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$. However, we use subscript $w_{i}$, when the meaning is clear. We use $e^{n}$ to denote the vector of all one's in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$. However, we often omit the superscript when the meaning is clear; $e_{i}$ denotes the $i$-th column of the identity matrix; $E$ is the matrix of all ones with an appropriate size; and $\operatorname{Ball}(x, \epsilon)$ is the ball centered at $x$ with radius $\epsilon$.

## Chapter 2

## Preliminaries

### 2.1 Convex Analysis Background

We present some of the background in convex analysis and polyhedral theory needed in subsequent chapters. In Section 2.1.1, we introduce basic notions of convex analysis and some related results. In Section 2.1.2, we present basic definitions of general cones and some examples. In Section 2.1.3, we present some important lemmas in polyhedral theory used in later chapters of this thesis.

### 2.1.1 Convex Sets

A reader familiar with the basics of convex sets and extreme points can skip to the next section.

Definition 2.1.1 (convex combination). A point $x$ in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ is a convex combination of the points $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$, if there exist nonnegative scalars $\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{k}$ such that

$$
x=\sum_{i=1}^{k} \lambda_{i} x_{i} \text { and } \sum_{i=1}^{k} \lambda_{i}=1 .
$$

If all scalars $\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{k}$ are positive, then we call $x$ is a strict convex combination of the points $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{k}$.

Definition 2.1.2 (convex set). A set $X \subseteq \mathbb{R}^{n}$ is convex if $X$ contains all convex combinations of points in $X$. Equivalently, $X \subseteq \mathbb{R}^{n}$ is convex if for any two points $x_{1}, x_{2} \in X$, the line segment $\left\{\lambda x_{1}+(1-\lambda) x_{2}: \lambda \in[0,1]\right\}$ with endpoints $x_{1}, x_{2}$ is contained in $X$.

Definition 2.1.3 (convex hull). Given a set $X \subseteq \mathbb{R}^{n}$, the convex hull of $X$, denoted by $\operatorname{conv}(X)$, is the smallest convex set containing $X$.

Definition 2.1.4 (extreme point). We say that $x \in X$ is an extreme point of $X$ if

$$
x=\alpha x_{1}+(1-\alpha) x_{2} \text { with } \alpha \in(0,1) \text { and } x_{1}, x_{2} \in X \Longrightarrow x=x_{1}=x_{2}
$$

We let $\operatorname{ext}(X)$ denote the set of all extreme points of $X$.
Lemma 2.1.5 ([28, Theorem 8.11]). ${ }^{1}$ Let $X$ be a compact convex set in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$. Then for any $p \in \operatorname{int}(X)$, one can fix $a_{0} \in \operatorname{ext}(X)$ and find $a_{1}, \ldots, a_{n} \in \operatorname{ext}(X)$, and write $p$ as a convex combination of $\left\{a_{j}\right\}_{j=0}^{n}$, with positive coefficient $\lambda_{0}$, i.e.,

$$
p=\sum_{j=0}^{n} \lambda_{j} a_{j}, \text { with } \lambda \geq 0, \lambda_{0}>0 \text { and } \sum_{j=0}^{n} \lambda_{j}=1 .
$$

Lemma 2.1.6. Let $X$ be a compact convex set in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ and let $\operatorname{ext}(X)=\left\{x_{1}, \ldots, x_{k}\right\}$. Then every point $p \in \operatorname{int}(X)$ can be written as a strict convex combination of all the extreme points, i.e.,

$$
p=\sum_{i=1}^{k} \lambda_{i} x_{i}, \text { for some } \lambda>0 \text { and } \sum_{i=1}^{k} \lambda_{i}=1 .
$$

Proof. Let $p$ be an interior point of $X$. Fix $x_{1} \in \operatorname{ext}(X)$ and let $\mathcal{J}_{1}$ be a subset of indices $\{1, \ldots, k\}$ satisfying $\left|\mathcal{J}_{1}\right|=n+1$ and $1 \in \mathcal{J}_{1}$. Then, by using Lemma 2.1.5, we can write

$$
p=\sum_{j \in \mathcal{J}_{1}} \lambda_{j}^{1} x_{j}, \text { for some } \lambda^{1} \in \mathbb{R}_{+}^{n+1} \text { with } \sum_{j \in \mathcal{J}_{1}} \lambda_{j}^{1}=1 \text { and } \lambda_{1}^{1}>0 .
$$

In fact, we can write, by letting $\lambda_{j}^{1}=0, j \in[k] \backslash \mathcal{J}_{1}$,

$$
p=\sum_{j=1}^{k} \lambda_{j}^{1} x_{j}, \text { for some } \lambda^{1} \in \mathbb{R}_{+}^{k} \text { with } \sum_{j=1}^{k} \lambda_{j}^{1}=1 \text { and } \lambda_{1}^{1}>0
$$

Similarly, for each $i \in\{1, \ldots, k\}$, we can fix $x_{i} \in \operatorname{ext}(X)$ and write

$$
\begin{equation*}
p=\sum_{j=1}^{k} \lambda_{j}^{i} x_{j}, \quad \text { for some } \lambda^{i} \in \mathbb{R}_{+}^{k} \text { with } \sum_{j=1}^{k} \lambda_{j}^{i}=1 \text { and } \lambda_{i}^{i}>0 . \tag{2.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then adding $k$ equations for each $i \in\{1, \ldots, k\}$ of (2.1.1) leads to

$$
k p=\sum_{i=1}^{k} \sum_{j=1}^{k} \lambda_{j}^{i} x_{j} \Longrightarrow p=\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \sum_{j=1}^{k} \lambda_{j}^{i} x_{j} .
$$

[^0]Since $\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \sum_{j=1}^{k} \lambda_{j}^{i}=1$ and each coefficient of $x_{j}$ is positive, $p$ is a strict convex combination of extreme points of $X$.

## Remark 2.1.7.

1. An interior point of a compact convex set may not have a unique strict convex combination.
2. An interior point of a compact convex set that is written as a strict convex combination of all extreme points may not use all the extreme points.

Examples are illustrated in Example 2.1.8 below.
Example 2.1.8. Given the set

$$
X=\left\{\binom{1}{0},\binom{0}{1},\binom{-1}{0},\binom{0}{-1}\right\}=\left\{e_{1}, e_{2},-e_{1},-e_{2}\right\}
$$

consider the convex set $S=\operatorname{conv}(X)$ (See Figure 2.1.1.). It is clear that all elements in


Figure 2.1.1: A convex set with four extreme points in $\mathbb{R}^{2} .\left(\frac{1}{2}, 0\right)^{T}$ is an interior point of $S$.
$X$ are extreme points of $S$.

1. $\left(\frac{1}{2}, 0\right)^{T}$ does not have a unique strict convex combination of all extreme points since

$$
\left(\frac{1}{2}, 0\right)^{T}=\frac{5}{8} e_{1}+\frac{1}{8} e_{2}+\frac{1}{8}\left(-e_{1}\right)+\frac{1}{8}\left(-e_{2}\right),
$$

and

$$
\left(\frac{1}{2}, 0\right)^{T}=\frac{6}{10} e_{1}+\frac{3}{20} e_{2}+\frac{1}{10}\left(-e_{1}\right)+\frac{3}{20}\left(-e_{2}\right) .
$$

2. We note that

$$
\left(\frac{1}{2}, 0\right)^{T}=\frac{1}{2} e_{1}+\frac{1}{4} e_{2}+\frac{1}{4}\left(-e_{2}\right),
$$

and the extreme point $-e_{1}$ is not used to represent $\left(\frac{1}{2}, 0\right)^{T}$ above.

Remark 2.1.9. The statement of Caratheodory's theorem is as follows: Any $x \in \operatorname{conv}(X) \subset$ $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ can be represented as a convex combination of $n+1$ elements of $S$. In Example 2.1.8, we note that $S$ is in $\mathbb{R}^{2}$. Hence, Caratheodory's theorem states that we need at most three points in $S$ to represent $\left(\frac{1}{2}, 0\right)^{T}$ as a convex combination of points in $S$ (See Item 2 of Example 2.1.8.).

### 2.1.2 General Cones

A reader familiar with basic definitions of cones, polar cones, cone bases and extreme rays may skip to the next section.

Definition 2.1.10 (cone). A nonempty set $S \subseteq \mathbb{R}^{n}$ is a cone if $0 \in S$ and for every $x \in S$ and $\lambda \geq 0, \lambda x$ belongs to $S$. In other words, a nonempty set $S$ is a cone if, and only if, $0 \in S$ and for every $x \in S \backslash\{0\}, S$ contains the half line starting from the origin in the direction $x$.

Definition 2.1.11 (pointed cone). A cone $K$ is said to be pointed if it does not contain a line, i.e.,

$$
x,-x \in K \Longrightarrow x=0 .
$$

Definition 2.1.12 (pointed cone with vertex). Given a pointed cone $K$, a pointed cone with vertex $x$ is any set of the form $x+K$.

Definition 2.1.13 (proper cone). A cone $K \subset \mathbb{R}^{n}$ is called a proper cone if $K$ is convex, closed, pointed and has nonempty interior.

Definition 2.1.14 (dual cone). The dual cone $K^{*}$ of a set $K$ is

$$
K^{*}:=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}:\langle x, y\rangle \geq 0, \forall y \in K\right\} .
$$

Definition 2.1.15 (conic combination, conical hull). A conic combination of elements $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{k}$ is an element of the form $\sum_{i=1}^{k} \alpha_{i} x_{i}$, where the coefficients $\alpha_{i}$ are nonnegative. If the coefficients $\alpha_{i}$ are positive, $\forall i=1, \ldots, k$, then we call $\sum_{i=1}^{k} \alpha_{i} x_{i}$ a strict conic combinations of $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{k}$.

The set of all conical combinations from a given nonempty set $S \subset \mathbb{R}^{n}$ is the conical hull of $S$, denoted by cone $(S)$.

Definition 2.1.16 (base for a cone, e.g., [1]). Let $P$ be a cone in a vector space. A nonempty convex subset $B$ of $P \backslash\{0\}$ is said to be a base for the cone $P$ (or, cone base), if for each $x \in P \backslash\{0\}$, there exists $\lambda>0$ and $b \in B$ both uniquely determined such that $x=\lambda b$.

Lemma 2.1.17 ([1, Corollary 3.8]). Every closed pointed cone in a finite dimensional vector space has a compact base.

By the homogeneity of cones, we may assume that a base $B$ for a pointed cone $P$ in a finite dimensional vector space $X$ is of the form

$$
B=P \cap\{x \in X:\langle x, p\rangle=\alpha\},
$$

for some $p \in X$ and $\alpha \in \mathbb{R}$ (See Figure 2.1.2.). We note that $B$ is a convex compact set.


Figure 2.1.2: An illustration of a cone base in $\mathbb{R}^{3}$ : The shaded region is a cone base of the given cone.

Example 2.1.18. Suppose that $P=\mathbb{R}_{+}^{n}$. Then we can choose a base

$$
B=\mathbb{R}_{+}^{n} \cap\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}:\langle e, x\rangle=1\right\}
$$

i.e., if $x \in \mathbb{R}_{+}^{n}$, then we let $\lambda=\langle e, x\rangle$ and $b=\frac{1}{\lambda} x$ to get the unique representation. Similarly, if $P=\mathbb{S}_{+}^{n}$ (i.e., the cone of positive semi-definite matrices), then we can choose

$$
B=\mathbb{S}_{+}^{n} \cap\left\{X \in \mathbb{S}_{+}^{n}:\langle I, X\rangle=1\right\}=\mathbb{S}_{+}^{n} \cap\left\{X \in \mathbb{S}_{+}^{n}: \operatorname{trace}(X)=1\right\}
$$

i.e., if $X \in \mathbb{S}_{+}^{n}$, then we let $\lambda=\langle I, X\rangle$ and $B=\frac{1}{\lambda} X$ to get the unique representation.

Definition 2.1.19 (ray). Given a vector $a \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$, we denote the half-line generated by a

$$
\operatorname{ray}(a)=\operatorname{cone}(\{a\})=\{k a: k \geq 0\}
$$

Definition 2.1.20 (extremal vector, extreme ray). Let $P \subset \mathbb{R}^{n}$ be a cone. A nonzero vector $v \in P$ is said to be an extremal vector of $P$ if

$$
x \in P \text { and } v-x \in P \Longrightarrow x=\lambda v,
$$

for some $\lambda \geq 0$. In this case, the half-ray $\operatorname{ray}(r)$ is called an extreme ray.

Example 2.1.21. Given

$$
a_{1}=\binom{-1}{1 / 2}, a_{2}=\binom{1 / 2}{1 / 3}, \text { and } a_{3}=\binom{0}{1}
$$

define $P:=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}\right\}\right)$. Then ray $\left(a_{1}\right)$ and ray $\left(a_{2}\right)$ are extreme rays of $P$ and $a_{1}$ and $a_{2}$ are extremal vectors of $P$ (See Figure 2.1.3.). In fact, for any $\lambda \in \mathbb{R}_{++}, \lambda a_{1}, \lambda a_{2}$ are extremal vectors of $P$.


Figure 2.1.3: The shaded region is cone $\left(\left\{a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}\right\}\right)$.

Definition 2.1.22 (recession cone). The recession cone of the closed convex set $C$ is the closed convex cone $C_{\infty}$ defined by

$$
C_{\infty}:=\left\{d \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: x+t d \in C, \forall t>0 \text { and } \forall x \in C\right\} .
$$

We call each element in $C_{\infty}$ a recession direction.
An extreme direction $d$, with $\|d\|=1$, of a convex set is a recession direction of the set that cannot be represented as a strict conic combination of two distinct recession directions $d^{1}$ and $d^{2}$ with $\left\|d^{1}\right\|=\left\|d^{2}\right\|=1$.

Lemma 2.1.23 ([25, Theorem 18.5]). Let $C$ be a close convex set containing no lines, and let $S$ be the set of all extreme points and extreme directions of $C$. Then $C=\operatorname{conv}(S)$.

Definition 2.1.24 (polar cone). Let $K$ be a convex cone. The negative polar cone of $K$ is

$$
K^{\circ}:=\left\{s \in \mathbb{R}^{n}:\langle s, x\rangle \leq 0, \forall x \in K\right\} .
$$

The positive polar cone of $K$ is

$$
K^{*}:=\left\{s \in \mathbb{R}^{n}:\langle s, x\rangle \geq 0, \forall x \in K\right\},
$$

which is precisely the dual cone of $K$ (See Definition 2.1.14.).

Lemma 2.1.25. Given two cones $K_{1}, K_{2}$ satisfying $K_{1} \subseteq K_{2}$, polarization is orderreversing, i.e.,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& K_{1} \subseteq K_{2} \Longrightarrow K_{1}^{\circ} \supseteq K_{2}^{\circ}, \\
& K_{1} \subseteq K_{2} \Longrightarrow K_{1}^{*} \supseteq K_{2}^{*} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Proof. Suppose that $x \in K_{2}^{\circ}$. Then $\langle s, x\rangle \leq 0, \forall s \in K_{2}$, by Definition 2.1.24. Since $K_{2}$ contains $K_{1}$, we have $\langle u, x\rangle \leq 0, \forall u \in K_{1}$. Hence $x \in K_{1}^{\circ}$, by Definition 2.1.24 again. Replacing $\leq$ with $\geq$ in the preceding proof gives the proof for the dual cone.

### 2.1.3 Polyhedral Theory

In the previous section, we studied some definitions of general cones. In this section, we further study a special class of cones, namely, the polyhedral cones.

Definition 2.1.26 (polyhedral cone). A set $P \subseteq \mathbb{R}^{n}$ is a polyhedral cone if $P$ is the intersection of a finite number of halfspaces containing the origin on their boundaries. That is, $P:=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: A x \geq 0\right\}$ for some $A \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times n}$.

Definition 2.1.27 (finitely generated cone). A set $P \subseteq \mathbb{R}^{n}$ is a finitely generated cone if $P$ is the convex cone generated by a finite set of vectors $r^{1}, \ldots, r^{k}$, for $k \geq 1$. We write $P=$ cone $\left(\left\{r^{1}, \ldots, r^{k}\right\}\right)$, and we say that $r^{1}, \ldots, r^{k}$ are the generators of $P$. If $R$ is the $n \times k$ matrix with columns $r^{1}, \ldots, r^{k}$,

$$
\text { cone }\left(\left\{r^{1}, \ldots, r^{k}\right\}\right)=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: \exists \lambda \geq 0 \text { such that } x=R \lambda\right\} .
$$

Lemma 2.1.28 ([10, Theorem 3.11], Minkowski, Weyl). A subset of $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ is a finitely generated cone if, and only if, it is a polyhedral cone.

We can also make a statement that resembles Lemma 2.1.6 in terms of proper polyhedral cones. We first present a lemma on the cone base of a cone.

Lemma 2.1.29 ([1, Theorem 1.48]). Let $B$ be a base of a cone $K$. Then a vector $b \in B$ is an extremal vector if and only if $b$ is an extreme point of the convex set $B$.

With Lemma 2.1.17 and Lemma 2.1.29, we can state the cone version of Lemma 2.1.6. In other words, an interior point in a proper cone can be written as a strict convex combination of its extremal vectors.

Lemma 2.1.30. Let $K$ be a pointed cone generated by $\left\{a^{i}\right\}_{i=1, \ldots, k}$, i.e., $K=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{a^{i}\right\}_{i=1, \ldots, k}\right)$. Assume that each $a^{i}, i=1, \ldots, k$ is an extremal vector of $K$. Then a point $p \in \operatorname{int}(K)$ can be written as a strict conic combination of extremal vectors of $K$, i.e.,

$$
p=\sum_{i=1}^{k} \lambda_{i} a^{i}, \text { with } \lambda_{i}>0, \forall i=1, \ldots, k
$$

Proof. By Lemma 2.1.17, we can choose a compact convex cone base $B$ for $K$. Since $K$ has a finite number of extremal vectors, $B$ has a finite number of extreme points in $B$, say $B=\left\{b^{1}, \ldots, b^{k}\right\}$, by Lemma 2.1.29. Since $p \in \operatorname{int}(K), \gamma p=\bar{p} \in \operatorname{int}(B)$, for some $\gamma>0$. Then, by Lemma 2.1.6,

$$
\bar{p}=\sum_{i=1}^{k} \mu_{i} b^{i}, \text { for some } \mu>0 \text { and } \sum_{i=1}^{k} \mu_{i}=1 .
$$

Let $\lambda_{i}=(1 / \gamma) \mu_{i}$, for all $i=1, \ldots, k$. Then, we have

$$
p=\sum_{i=1}^{k} \lambda_{i} b^{i}, \text { for some } \lambda>0
$$

In Section 3.1, we will construct a polyhedral cone $P$ with specified properties. The cone is constructed by generating its extreme rays and is defined by the convex hull of these extreme rays, i.e., $P=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{p^{i}: i \in I\right\}\right)$, where $I$ is the set of indices of extreme rays. By Lemma 2.1.28, we know that we need a finite number of extreme rays to construct a polyhedral cone. Depending on the number of its extreme rays, the cone can be a nondegenerate cone or a degenerate cone. In the rest of this section, we explore how the number of extreme rays of a cone determines its nondegeneracy/degeneracy.

Definition 2.1.31 (nondegenerate/degenerate polyhedral cone). A proper cone $P$ formed from an intersection of halfspaces is said to be nondegenerate, if exactly $n$ distinct halfspaces are active at its vertex. If there are more than $n$ active halfspaces at its vertex, then we call $P$ degenerate.


Figure 2.1.4: A non-degenerate cone(LHS) and a degenerate cone(RHS) in $\mathbb{R}^{3}$.

Given a cone $P$, knowing all extreme rays of $P$ makes it very easy to obtain its polar cone.

Lemma 2.1.32 ([1, Theorem 3.36]). Let a polyhedral cone $P$ be generated by its extremal vectors $\left\{a^{i}\right\}_{i \in I}$. Then aside from scalar multiples, the dual cone $P^{*}$ is precisely the inter-
section of halfspaces determined by the same $a^{i}$ 's, i.e.,

$$
P^{*}=\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{n}:\left\langle a^{i}, y\right\rangle \geq 0, \forall i \in I\right\} .^{2}
$$

Proof. Suppose that we are given any points

$$
x \in \operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{a^{i}\right\}_{i \in I}\right) \text { and } y \in\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{n}:\left\langle a^{i}, y\right\rangle \geq 0, \forall i \in I\right\}
$$

Then, for some $\lambda \geq 0$,

$$
\langle x, y\rangle=\left\langle\sum_{i=1}^{k} \lambda_{i} a^{i}, y\right\rangle=\sum_{i=1}^{k} \lambda_{i}\left\langle a^{i}, y\right\rangle \geq 0
$$

Hence, $\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{n}:\left\langle a^{i}, y\right\rangle \geq 0, \forall i \in I\right\} \subset P^{*}$.
To show the equality, suppose to the contrary that there exists

$$
y^{\prime} \in P^{*} \backslash\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{n}:\left\langle a^{i}, y\right\rangle \geq 0, \forall i \in I\right\}
$$

Then there exists $j \in I$ such that $\left\langle a^{j}, y^{\prime}\right\rangle<0$. Note that $\left\langle a^{j}, y^{\prime}\right\rangle \geq 0$ since $a^{j} \in P$. Hence, we have $0 \leq\left\langle a^{j}, y\right\rangle<0$ and this yields a contradiction.

A set $\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}:\left\langle a^{i}, x\right\rangle \leq b_{i},\left\langle a^{j}, x\right\rangle=b_{j}, i \in \mathcal{I}, j \in \mathcal{J}\right.$, for some $\left.\mathcal{I}, \mathcal{J}\right\}$ is said to be in minimal representation for $P$ if all its constraints are irredundant. The following lemma is written with polyhedra. Since cones are polyhedra, Lemma 2.1.33 still works with cones. Lemma 2.1.33 shows that there is a unique representation of the dual cone $P^{*}$, up to scalar multiples.

Lemma 2.1.33 ([10, Corollary 3.31]). Let $P$ be a full-dimensional polyhedron and let $A x \leq b$ be a minimal representation of $P$. Then $A x \leq b$ is uniquely defined up to scaling, i.e., up to multiplying inequalities by a positive scalar.

In this thesis, we assume that the full-dimensional polyhedral cones are given in their minimal representations. By Lemma 2.1.33, we may assume that each normal vector $a^{i}$ to the halfspace $\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}:\left\langle a^{i}, x\right\rangle \geq 0\right\}$ is of length 1 .

Let $\left\{p^{j}\right\}_{j \in J}$ be the set of extremal vectors of the dual cone, (cone $\left.\left(\left\{a^{i}\right\}_{i \in I}\right)\right)^{*}$. Then, Table 2.1.1 is the consequence of Lemma 2.1.32. We observe from Table 2.1.1 that each extremal vector of the cone $P$ gives a normal vector of a half-space determining its dual cone $P^{*}$. In other words, it is very easy to find halfspaces determining a cone as long as we know the extremal vectors of its dual cone. Similarly, if we know the extremal vectors of the dual cone, we can easily find $P$ as an intersection of halfspaces. The following example

[^1]| Cone | $P$ | $P^{*}$ |
| :--- | :---: | :---: |
| Extremal vectors | $a^{1}, \ldots, a^{k}$ | $p^{1}, \ldots, p^{j}$ |
| Minimal set of inequalities | $p^{1}, \ldots, p^{j}$ | $a^{1}, \ldots, a^{k}$ |

Table 2.1.1: Conic duality
illustrates how easily we can obtain the halfspace description of a cone once we know all extremal vectors of the primal and dual cones.
Example 2.1.34. Given the vectors in $\mathbb{R}^{3}$,

$$
a^{1}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
2 / \sqrt{5} \\
1 / \sqrt{5} \\
0
\end{array}\right), a^{2}=\left(\begin{array}{l}
0 \\
1 \\
0
\end{array}\right), a^{3}=\left(\begin{array}{l}
0 \\
0 \\
1
\end{array}\right), \quad \text { and } a^{4}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
-2 / 3 \\
2 / 3 \\
1 / 3
\end{array}\right)
$$

define $P:=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{a^{1}, \ldots, a^{4}\right\}\right)$. Then by Lemma 2.1.32, we have

$$
P^{*}=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{3}:\left\langle a^{i}, x\right\rangle \geq 0, i=1, \ldots 4\right\} .
$$

The extremal vectors of $P^{*}$ are given by

$$
p^{1}=\left(\begin{array}{l}
0 \\
0 \\
1
\end{array}\right), p^{2}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
1 / \sqrt{5} \\
0 \\
2 / \sqrt{5}
\end{array}\right), p^{3}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
1 / \sqrt{2} \\
1 / \sqrt{2} \\
0
\end{array}\right), \quad \text { and } p^{4}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
-1 / \sqrt{5} \\
2 / \sqrt{5} \\
0
\end{array}\right)
$$

(We are going to see how to obtain extremal vectors of the dual cone in Algorithm 2.1.1 later in this section.). Then by Lemma 2.1.32 again, the dual cone of $P^{*}$ is

$$
P^{* *}=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{3}:\left\langle p^{i}, x\right\rangle \geq 0, i=1, \ldots 4\right\}
$$

Therefore, we have

$$
\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{a^{1}, \ldots, a^{4}\right\}\right)=P=P^{* *}=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{3}:\left\langle p^{i}, x\right\rangle \geq 0, i=1, \ldots 4\right\}
$$

See Figure 2.1.5 for an illustration.
The following lemma shows a characterization for an extremal vector of a pointed polyhedral cone.
Lemma 2.1.35 ([10, Theorem 3.35]). Let $P$ be a pointed polyhedral cone and let $\operatorname{ray}(r)$ be a ray in $P$. Then $r$ is an extremal vector of $P$ if, and only if, $r$ satisfies $n-1$ linear independent constraints of $A x \geq 0$ with equality.

An extremal vector of a pointed polyhedral cone $P:=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: A x \geq 0\right\}$, with $A \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times n}$, can be obtained by using Lemma 2.1.35. We assume that $P$ is in its minimal representation, i.e., all halfspaces of $P$ are irredundant.


Figure 2.1.5: The solid black lines represent $P=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{a^{1}, \ldots, a^{4}\right\}\right)$ and the red dashed lines represent $P^{*}=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{p^{1}, \ldots, p^{4}\right\}\right)$.

1. We choose $n-1$ linearly independent rows of $A$ and form a $(n-1) \times n$ submatrix $A^{\prime}$ of $A$ as follows:

$$
A^{\prime}=\left[\begin{array}{c}
\left(a^{1}\right)^{T} \\
\vdots \\
\left(a^{n-1}\right)^{T}
\end{array}\right]
$$

2. We compute the null space of $A^{\prime}$. Then we have

$$
\operatorname{null}\left(A^{\prime}\right)=\{k p: k \in \mathbb{R}\}, \text { for some } p \in \mathbb{R}^{n}
$$

(Note that $\operatorname{dim}\left(\operatorname{null}\left(A^{\prime}\right)\right)=1$, since the size of $A^{\prime}$ is $(n-1) \times n$ and the rows of $A^{\prime}$ are linearly independent.)
3. We need to check the feasibility of $p$. This process is necessary as $p$ might not be a part of the cone $P$ :
(a) If $A p \geq 0$, then $p$ is an extremal vector.
(b) If $A p \leq 0$, then $-p$ is an extremal vector of $P$.

If $p$ satisfies neither $A p \leq 0$ nor $A p \geq 0, p$ cannot be made to be feasible to $A x \geq 0$.
The above process Item 1-3 was to obtain just one extremal vector. Hence we need to find all possible $n-1$ linearly independent rows of $A$ and repeat the above process Item 1-3 for each submatrix of $A$ that has $n-1$ linearly independent rows of $A$. We present this in Algorithm 2.1.1 below.

As we are able to obtain all extremal vectors of a pointed polyhedral cone of the form $\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: A x \geq 0\right\}$ using Algorithm 2.1.1, we can write the dual cone $K^{*}=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}\right.$ : $\left.\left\langle a^{i}, x\right\rangle \geq 0, i=1, \ldots, k\right\}$ as the convex hull of its extreme rays, say $K^{*}=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{p^{j}\right\}_{j \in J}\right)$. Then by Lemma 2.1.32 again, we obtain

$$
K=K^{* *}=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}:\left\langle p^{j}, x\right\rangle \geq 0, j \in J\right\} .
$$

```
Algorithm 2.1.1: Compute Extremal Vectors of a Cone
    Input: A pointed polyhedral cone \(C=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: A x \geq 0\right\}\), where \(A \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times n}\)
                with \(m \geq n\).
    Make a list \(L \in \overline{\mathbb{R}}^{m} C_{n-1 \times n-1}\) of all possible combinations of \(\{1, \ldots, m\}\) taken \(n-1\)
    at a time, where each row of \(L\) contains a combination.
    for \(i=1:{ }^{m} C_{n-1}\) do
        \(I:=L(i,:)\)
        \(\bar{A}:=A(I,:)\)
        if \(\operatorname{rank}(\bar{A})=n-1\) then
            compute \(p=\operatorname{null}(\bar{A})\)
            normalize \(p\)
            if \(A p \geq 0\) then
            save \(p \quad \triangleright p\) is an extremal vector of \(C\).
                end if
            if \(A p \leq 0\) then
                save \(-p \quad \triangleright-p\) is an extremal vector of \(C\).
            end if
        end if
    end for
    Return: A matrix \(P\) with each row corresponds to an extremal vector \(\left(p^{i}\right)^{T}\) of \(C\).
```

Hence, by using Algorithm 2.1.1 and Lemma 2.1.32, we can convert the cone defined by the convex hull of its extreme rays into the cone defined by the intersection of halfspaces. We present a diagram of this procedure in Table 2.1.2:

$$
\begin{array}{cc}
K=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{a^{i}\right\}_{i \in I}\right) \\
\| & \xrightarrow{\text { Lemma 2.1.32 }}
\end{array} K^{*}=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}:\left\langle a^{i}, x\right\rangle \geq 0, i \in I\right\}
$$

Table 2.1.2: Starting from $K=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{a^{i}\right\}_{i \in I}\right)$, we can convert $K$ as an intersection of halfspaces.

We now present a lemma on the number of extreme rays.
Lemma 2.1.36. If $P=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: A x \geq 0\right\}$ is a proper nondegenerate cone, then there are exactly $n$ extreme rays in $P$.

Proof. Suppose that $P$ is nondegenerate. Then the intersection of exactly $n$ distinct halfspaces $\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}:\left(a^{i}\right)^{T} x \leq 0, i=1, \ldots, n\right\}$ determine the cone $P$. Let $\left(a^{i}\right)^{T}$ be the $i$-th row of $A$. Then there are exactly $\binom{n}{n-1}$ one-dimensional null spaces determined by $n-1$
halfspaces. Suppose without loss of generality that $A^{\prime}$ is obtained by removing the last row of $A$. Let $d$ be the basis of $\operatorname{null}\left(A^{\prime}\right)$. Then we get

$$
A d=\left[\begin{array}{c}
A^{\prime} \\
\left(a^{n}\right)^{T}
\end{array}\right] d=\left[\begin{array}{c}
A^{\prime} d \\
\left\langle a^{n}, d\right\rangle
\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{c}
0 \\
\left\langle a^{n}, d\right\rangle
\end{array}\right] .
$$

Therefore, $d$ must satisfy either $\left\langle a^{n}, d\right\rangle>0$ or $\left\langle a^{n}, d\right\rangle<0$. If $\left\langle a^{n}, d\right\rangle>0, d$ is a feasible extremal vector. If $\left\langle a^{n}, d\right\rangle<0$, we obtain $\left\langle a^{n},-d\right\rangle>0$ and hence $-d$ is an extremal vector. Therefore, every $n-1$ of $n$ halfspaces determine an extreme ray of $P$. Thus, $P$ has exactly $n$ extreme rays.

Corollary 2.1.37. If a cone $P$ is the convex hull of exactly $n$ extreme rays, then $P$ is nondegenerate.

Proof. Suppose that $P=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{a^{i}\right\}_{i=1, \ldots, n}\right)$, where each $a^{i}, i=1, \ldots, n$, is an extremal vector of $P$. Then by Lemma 2.1.32, the dual cone $P^{*}$ is

$$
\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}:\left\langle a^{i}, x\right\rangle \geq 0, i=1, \ldots, n\right\} .
$$

By Lemma 2.1.36, the dual cone is the convex hull of exactly $n$ extreme rays. Denote each extremal vector by $p^{i}$. Then, by the Lemma 2.1.32 again,

$$
P^{* *}=\left\{x:\left\langle p^{i}, x\right\rangle \geq 0, i=1, \ldots, n\right\} .
$$

Thus, $P$ is a non-degenerate cone.
Corollary 2.1.38. If $P$ is proper and nondegenerate, then so is $P^{*}$.
Proof. It is clear by the proof of Corollary 2.1.37.

### 2.2 The Generalized Gradient

This section contains contents from Section 2.1 in [9]. In this section, we work with an arbitrary Banach space $X$, i.e., a complete normed space.

Definition 2.2.1 (locally Lipschitz near $x$ ). Let $Y$ be a subset of $X$. Let $f: Y \rightarrow R$ be $a$ given function, and let $x \in Y \subseteq X$. The function $f$ is said to be locally Lipschitz near $x$ if there exists a scalar $K$ and a positive number $\epsilon$ such that the following holds:

$$
\left|f\left(y^{\prime \prime}\right)-f\left(y^{\prime}\right)\right| \leq K\left\|y^{\prime \prime}-y^{\prime}\right\|, \forall y^{\prime \prime}, y^{\prime} \in \operatorname{Ball}(x, \epsilon) \cap Y
$$

Intuitively speaking, when a function $f$ is locally Lipschitz near $x$, the function values near $x$ cannot be fluctuating too wildly.

Remark 2.2.2. We want to point out that 'locally Lipschitz near $x$ ' and 'locally Lipschitz at $x^{\prime}$ are not the same notion. A function $f: Y \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ is said to be locally Lipschitz at $x \in Y$ if

$$
|f(x)-f(y)| \leq K\|x-y\|, \quad \forall y \in \operatorname{Ball}(x, \epsilon) \cap Y
$$

While 'locally Lipschitz near $x$ ' implies 'locally Lipschitz at $x$ ', however the other direction does not hold (See Example 2.2.3.). Hence, 'locally Lipschitz near $x$ ' is a stronger property than 'locally Lipschitz at $x$ '.

Example 2.2.3. Consider the function $f: \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ (See Figure 2.2.1.)


Figure 2.2.1: A function that is locally Lipschitz at 0 , but not locally Lipschitz near 0

$$
f(x)= \begin{cases}x^{2} \sin \left(\frac{1}{x^{2}}\right) & , \text { if } x \neq 0 \\ 0 & \text { if } x=0\end{cases}
$$

We note that $f(x)$ is differentiable at all $x \in \mathbb{R}$. In particular, $f^{\prime}(0)=0$, since $\lim _{h \rightarrow 0}$ $\left(h^{2} \sin \left(1 / h^{2}\right)\right) / h=0$. Hence, by the definition of differentiability, we have

$$
\forall \epsilon>0, \exists \delta>0 \text { such that }|h|<\delta \Longrightarrow\left|\frac{f(h)-f(0)}{h}\right|<\epsilon
$$

In other words, there exists $\delta>0$ such that $|f(h)-f(0)|<1 \cdot|h|$. Thus, $f(x)$ is Lipschitz continuous at 0.

Suppose that $f(x)$ is Lipschitz continuous near 0 . Then there exists $\epsilon>0$ such that $\forall x^{\prime \prime}, x^{\prime} \in(-\epsilon, \epsilon)$, we have $\left|f\left(x^{\prime \prime}\right)-f\left(x^{\prime}\right)\right| \leq L\left|x^{\prime \prime}-x^{\prime}\right|$, for some L. Let $x=1 / \sqrt{2 n \pi+\delta}$ and $y=1 / \sqrt{2 n \pi}$ such that $0<x<y<\epsilon$. We note that

$$
\sin \left(\frac{1}{y^{2}}\right)=0 \text { and } x-y=\frac{\sqrt{2 n \pi}-\sqrt{2 n \pi+\delta}}{\sqrt{2 n \pi} \sqrt{2 n \pi+\delta}} .
$$

Then, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
|f(x)-f(y)| & =\left|x^{2} \sin \left(\frac{1}{x^{2}}\right)-y^{2} \sin \left(\frac{1}{y^{2}}\right)\right| \\
& =\left|x^{2} \sin \left(\frac{1}{x^{2}}\right)\right| \\
& =\left|\frac{1}{2 n \pi+\delta} \sin (2 n \pi+\delta)\right| \\
& =\left|\sin (2 n \pi+\delta) \frac{\sqrt{2 n \pi}}{\sqrt{2 n \pi+\delta}(\sqrt{2 n \pi}-\sqrt{2 n \pi+\delta})} \frac{\sqrt{2 n \pi}-\sqrt{2 n \pi+\delta}}{\sqrt{2 n \pi} \sqrt{2 n \pi+\delta}}\right| \\
& \leq\left|\sin (2 n \pi+\delta) \frac{\sqrt{2 n \pi}}{\sqrt{2 n \pi+\delta}(\sqrt{2 n \pi}-\sqrt{2 n \pi+\delta})}\right||x-y| \\
& =\left|\sin (2 n \pi+\delta) \frac{\sqrt{2 n \pi}\left(\sqrt{4 n^{2} \pi^{2}+2 \delta n \pi}+2 n \pi+\delta\right)}{-2 \delta n \pi-\delta^{2}}\right||x-y| \\
& \leq L|x-y| .
\end{aligned}
$$

However, letting $n \rightarrow \infty$ yields a contradiction. Thus, $f(x)$ is not Lipschitz continuous near 0.

The conventional directional derivative of $f$ at $x$ in the direction $d$ is defined as

$$
f^{\prime}(x ; d):=\lim _{t \downarrow 0} \frac{f(x+t d)-f(x)}{t}
$$

A reader may refer to [18, Section D.1.1] for more arguments on the directional derivative.
We define the generalized directional derivative of a nonsmooth function as well.
Definition 2.2.4. (generalized directional derivative) Let $f$ be locally Lipschitz near $x$, and let $v$ be any other vector in $X$. The generalized directional derivative of $f$ at $x$ in the direction $v$ is given by

$$
f^{\circ}(x ; v):=\limsup _{y \rightarrow x, \lambda \downarrow 0} \frac{f(y+\lambda v)-f(y)}{\lambda}\left(=\lim _{\lambda \downarrow 0} \sup _{y \in \operatorname{Ball}(0, \delta), \delta \in(0, \lambda)} \frac{f(x+y+\delta v)-f(x+y)}{\delta}\right) .
$$

Definition 2.2.5 (generalized gradient). The generalized gradient of $f$ at $x$ is

$$
\partial f(x):=\left\{\xi \in X^{*}: f^{\circ}(x ; v) \geq\langle v, \xi\rangle, \forall v \in X\right\},
$$

where $X^{*}$ is the dual space of $X$.
Example 2.2.6. Let $f$ be a real valued function on $\mathbb{R}$ (See Figure 2.2.2.):

$$
f(x)= \begin{cases}2 x & , \text { if } x \geq 0 \\ -\frac{1}{2} x & , \text { if } x<0\end{cases}
$$

If $x>0$, then we have


Figure 2.2.2: A nonsmooth function on $\mathbb{R}$.

$$
f^{\circ}(x ; v)=\limsup _{y \rightarrow x, t \downarrow 0} \frac{2(y+t v)-2 y}{t}=2 v, \text { and } \partial f(x)=\{2\} .
$$

If $x<0$, then we have

$$
f^{\circ}(x ; v)=\limsup _{y \rightarrow x, t \downarrow 0} \frac{-1 / 2(y+t v)+1 / 2 y}{t}=-\frac{1}{2} v, \text { and } \partial f(x)=\{-1 / 2\} .
$$

Now suppose that $x=0$. If $v \geq 0$, then we have

$$
f^{\circ}(x ; v)=\lim _{t \downarrow 0} \sup _{|y|<\delta, \delta \in(0, t)} \frac{f(y+\delta v)-f(y)}{\delta}=\lim _{t \downarrow 0} \frac{2 \delta v}{\delta}=2 v,
$$

and $2 v \geq \xi v$ implies that $2 \geq \xi$. If $v<0$, we have

$$
f^{\circ}(x ; v)=\lim _{t \downarrow 0} \sup _{|y|<\delta, \delta \in(0, t)} \frac{f(y+\delta v)-f(y)}{\delta}=\lim _{t \downarrow 0} \frac{-1 / 2 \delta v}{\delta}=-\frac{1}{2} v,
$$

and $-1 / 2 v \geq \xi v$ implies that $-1 / 2 \leq \xi$. Thus, by Definition 2.2.5, we have $\partial f(x)=$ $[-1 / 2,2]$.

We introduced Example 2.2.6 for illustrative purposes. In practice, it is not easy to compute the generalized gradients. Hence, we introduce the following characterization between the generalized directional derivative and the generalized gradient for later use.

Proposition 2.2.7 ([9, Proposition 2.1.2]). Let $f$ be Lipschitz continuous near $x \in X$. Then, for every $v$ in $X$,

$$
f^{\circ}(x ; v)=\max \{\langle\xi, v\rangle: \xi \in \partial f(x)\} .
$$

Lemma 2.2.8. If a function $f$ is continuously differentiable at $x$, then $\partial f(x)=\{\nabla f(x)\}$, i.e., $\partial f(x)$ is a singleton.

### 2.3 Linear Programming

In this section, we introduce some basic definitions and lemmas related to linear programming theory. We follow the approach from [17]. A reader familiar with the basics of linear programming can skip to the next section.

Definition 2.3.1 (linear programming (LP)). A linear programming (LP) is the problem of maximizing or minimizing an affine function subject to a finite number of linear equality and/or inequality constraints.

Given a minimization $\mathbf{L P}$ denoted (P), we call a vector $x$ a feasible solution if $x$ satisfies all the constraints of $(\mathrm{P})$. If the objective value of a feasible solution $x^{*}$ is at least as small as any other feasible solution, then we call $x^{*}$ an optimal solution to (P). An $\mathbf{L P}$ is said to be in standard equality form (SEF), if it is of the form

$$
\begin{array}{cl}
\max _{x} & \langle c, x\rangle+\bar{z} \\
(\text { SEF }) & \text { subject to } \\
& A x=b \in \mathbb{R}^{m} \\
& x \in \mathbb{R}_{+}^{n},
\end{array}
$$

where $\bar{z}$ is a scalar in $\mathbb{R}$, and Below we use the given linear system in (SEF) and assume that the matrix $A \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times n}$ has linearly independent rows. In addition, we refer to a polyhedron that is formed from the constraints in (SEF).

Given a subset $B$ of column indices of $A \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times n}$, let $A_{B}$ be the matrix formed by columns $A(:, i)$ for all $i \in B$.

Definition 2.3.2. (basis, basic/nonbasic variable) Given the linear system $A x=b$ as in ( $\boldsymbol{S E F}$ ), we say that a set of column indices $B$ forms a basis, if the matrix $A_{B}$ is square and non-singular. Then, the variables $x_{j}, j \in B$ are said to be basic; and the variables $x_{j}, j \in N:=\{1, \ldots, n\} \backslash B$, are said to be nonbasic.

Definition 2.3 .3 (basic solution!basic feasible solution). A vector $\bar{x}$ is said to be a basic solution of $A x=b$ for a basis $B$, if

$$
A \bar{x}=b \text { and } \bar{x}_{N}=0 .
$$

$\bar{x}$ is called $a$ basic feasible solution, if $\bar{x} \geq 0$.

Definition 2.3.4 (degenerate/nondegenerate basic solution). Given the polyhedron $\{x \in$ $\left.\mathbb{R}^{n}: A x=b, x \geq 0\right\}$ with $A \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times n}$, let $\bar{x}$ be a basic solution. The vector $\bar{x}$ is said to be $a$ degenerate basic solution, if more than $n-m$ of the coordinates of $\bar{x}$ are zero. If the basic solution $\bar{x}$ has exactly $n-m$ of nonzero coordinates, $\bar{x}$ is said to be a nondegenerate basic solution.

Readers not familiar with duality may refer to [7, Chapter 5] or [17, Chapter 4]. In this thesis we concentrate on two primal-dual pairs. We list two pairs of primal-dual LPs, which we will use frequently, the standard and symmetric forms, respectively, e.g., [22]:

| $\min$ | $\langle c, x\rangle$ | $\max$ | $\langle b, y\rangle$ |
| :---: | :--- | :---: | :--- |
| subject to | $A x=b$ | subject to | $A^{T} y \leq c$ |
|  | $x \geq 0$ |  |  |
|  |  |  |  |
| min | $\langle c, x\rangle$ | $\max$ | $\langle b, y\rangle$ |
| subject to | $A x \geq b$ | subject to | $A^{T} y \leq c$ |
|  | $x \geq 0$ |  | $y \geq 0$ |

The following strong duality theorem follows from standard $\mathbf{L P}$ duality theorems in texts on LP, see e.g., [22].

Theorem 2.3.5 (primal-dual strong duality for LP). Let $(P)$ and $(D)$ be a feasible primaldual pair. Then there exist optimal solutions $\bar{x}$ of $(P)$ and $\bar{y}$ of $(D)$. Moreover, the objective value with $\bar{x}$ in ( $P$ ) equals the objective value with $\bar{y}$ in ( $D$ ).

Given a minimization $\mathbf{L P}(P) \min \{\langle c, x\rangle: A x \geq b, x \geq 0\}$, we denote

$$
\operatorname{Argmin}\{\langle c, x\rangle: A x \geq b, x \geq 0\}
$$

as the set of optimal solutions to $(P)$. Similarly, given a maximization $\mathbf{L P}(D) \max \{\langle b, y\rangle$ : $\left.A^{T} y \leq c, y \geq 0\right\}$, we denote

$$
\operatorname{Argmax}\left\{\langle b, y\rangle: A^{T} y \leq c, y \geq 0\right\}
$$

as the set of optimal solutions to $(D)$.
There are many interesting statements involving primal-dual pairs of LPs. For example, primal-dual strong duality holds for any primal-dual LP pair as long as one of them has a finite optimal value. In fact, the optimal values of the pairs are always the same unless both are infeasible. The primal LP has Slater points if, and only if, the dual optimal set is bounded. One can never find a primal-dual pair in standard form where both have bounded feasible regions.

### 2.4 Linear Robust Optimization Theory

Robust optimization is a field of optimization that tries to find the best uncertainty (perturbation)-immunized solution with given uncertainty set. A candidate solution $x$ needs to satisfy all possible realizations of uncertain data. We call the set of all uncertain data an uncertainty set. Usually, the uncertainty set contains infinitely many elements and hence we can have infinitely many constraints. Such systems are called semi-infinite
systems. (If the uncertainty set has finitely many elements, then we generally reduce to a finite constrained problem.) It is important to convert the infinite system of constraints to a finite system of inequalities and a finite number of variables. That is, we wish to convert the semi-infinite system into a tractable form.

In Section 2.4.1, we introduce some basic definitions of robust optimization theory. In Section 2.4.2, we show how to convert a semi-infinite system into a tractable system with box uncertainty.

### 2.4.1 Definitions

We follow the definitions and the preliminaries from [6].
Definition 2.4.1 (uncertain linear programming). An uncertain linear programming problem is a collection

$$
\left(\boldsymbol{L} \boldsymbol{P}_{\mathcal{U}}\right) \quad\left\{\min _{x}\{\langle c, x\rangle+d: A x \leq b\}\right\}_{(c, d, A, b) \in \mathcal{U}}
$$

of $\boldsymbol{L P}$ problems $\min _{x}\{\langle c, x\rangle+d: A x \leq b\}$ with a common structure (i.e., with the same number of constraints and the same number of variables) with the data varying in a given uncertainty set $\mathcal{U}$.

We assume that the uncertainty set $\mathcal{U}$ is affinely parametrized by a perturbation vector $\zeta$ varying in a given perturbation set $\mathcal{Z}$, i.e.,

$$
\mathcal{U}=\left\{(c, d, A, b):\left[\begin{array}{l|l}
c^{T} & d \\
\hline A & b
\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{c|c}
c_{0}^{T} & d_{0} \\
\hline A_{0} & b_{0}
\end{array}\right]+\sum_{\ell=1}^{L} \zeta_{\ell}\left[\begin{array}{c|c}
c_{\ell}^{T} & d_{\ell} \\
\hline A_{\ell} & b_{\ell}
\end{array}\right] \text { for } \zeta \in \mathcal{Z}\right\} .
$$

Here, $\left(c_{0}, d_{0}, A_{0}, b_{0}\right)$ is the nominal data given in $\left(\mathbf{L} \mathbf{P}_{\mathcal{U}}\right)$. We may partition the uncertainty set $\mathcal{U}$ as follows:

$$
\mathcal{U}=\mathcal{U}_{A, b} \times \mathcal{U}_{c, d},
$$

where $\mathcal{U}_{A, b}:=\{(A, b):(A, b, c, d) \in \mathcal{U}\}$ and $\mathcal{U}_{c, d}:=\{(c, d):(A, b, c, d) \in \mathcal{U}\}$.
Definition 2.4.2 (robust feasible). A vector $\bar{x} \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$ is a robust feasible solution to ( $\boldsymbol{L} \boldsymbol{P}_{\mathcal{U}}$ ), if it satisfies all realizations of the constraints from the uncertainty set $\mathcal{U}_{A, b}$. We denote $\mathcal{F}_{\mathcal{U}}(A, b)$ as the set of robust feasible solutions (robust feasible set), i.e.,

$$
\mathcal{F}_{\mathcal{U}}(A, b):=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: A x \leq b, \forall(A, b) \in \mathcal{U}_{A, b}\right\} .
$$

Definition 2.4.3 (robust counterpart). The robust counterpart of an uncertain $\boldsymbol{L P}$ problem $\left(\boldsymbol{L} \boldsymbol{P}_{\mathcal{U}}\right)$ is the optimization problem

$$
\begin{align*}
p_{R C}^{*} & =\min _{x} \quad \sup _{(c, d, A, b) \in \mathcal{U}}\{\langle c, x\rangle+d: A x \leq b\} \\
& =\min _{x \in \mathcal{F}_{\mathcal{U}}(A, b)} \sup \left\{\langle c, x\rangle+d:(c, d) \in \mathcal{U}_{c, d}\right\} \tag{2.4.1}
\end{align*}
$$

of minimizing the robust value of the objective over all robust feasible solutions to the uncertain problem.

An optimal solution to the robust counterpart is called a robust optimal solution to $\mathbf{L} \mathbf{P}_{\mathcal{U}}$ and the optimal value of the robust counterpart is called the robust optimal value of $\mathbf{L} \mathbf{P}_{\mathcal{U}}$. The meaning of the robust counterpart (2.4.1) is that we are looking for a solution that gives the best possible guaranteed value. The word best corresponds to min, and the word guaranteed corresponds to sup.

### 2.4.2 Reformulation of LP with Box Uncertainty

In this section, we will explore how a linear semi-infinite system

$$
A x \leq b, \forall(A, b) \in \mathcal{U}_{A, b}
$$

can be reformulated as a system of finite number of inequalities and variables under box uncertainty.

We first focus on a single uncertainty-affected linear inequality $\langle a, x\rangle \leq \beta, x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$. We let $\left\langle a^{0}, x\right\rangle \leq \beta^{0}$ be a single nominal constraint of $A x \leq b$. Given an uncertainty set

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{U}:=\left\{[a ; \beta]=\left[a^{0} ; \beta^{0}\right]+\sum_{\ell=1}^{L} \zeta_{\ell}\left[a^{\ell} ; \beta^{\ell}\right], \text { for some } \zeta=\left(\zeta_{\ell}\right) \in \mathcal{Z}\right\} \tag{2.4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

we want to represent the family of linear inequalities

$$
\{\langle a, x\rangle \leq \beta\}_{(a, \beta) \in \mathcal{U}}
$$

using a finite number of inequalities and a finite number of variables. Note that in (2.4.2), elements in $\mathcal{U}$ are parametrized by the set $\mathcal{Z}$, which we call the perturbation set.

Let the perturbation set be defined as

$$
\mathcal{Z}:=\operatorname{Box}_{1}:=\left\{\zeta \in \mathbb{R}^{L}:\|\zeta\|_{\infty} \leq 1\right\}
$$

Then, we have
$x$ is robust feasible $\Longleftrightarrow a^{T} x \leq \beta, \forall[a ; \beta] \in\left\{\left[a^{0} ; \beta^{0}\right]+\sum_{\ell=1}^{L} \zeta_{\ell}\left[a^{\ell} ; \beta^{\ell}\right], \zeta \in \mathcal{Z}\right\}$

$$
\Longleftrightarrow\left[a^{0}\right]^{T} x+\sum_{\ell=1}^{L} \zeta_{\ell}\left[a^{\ell}\right]^{T} x \leq \beta^{0}+\sum_{\ell=1}^{L} \zeta_{\ell} \beta^{\ell}, \forall \zeta \in\left\{\zeta:\|\zeta\|_{\infty} \leq 1\right\}
$$

$$
\Longleftrightarrow \sum_{\ell=1}^{L} \zeta_{\ell}\left[\left[a^{\ell}\right]^{T} x-\beta^{\ell}\right] \leq \beta^{0}-\left[a^{0}\right]^{T} x, \quad \forall\left(\zeta:\left|\zeta_{\ell}\right| \leq 1, \ell=1, \ldots, L\right)
$$

$$
\Longleftrightarrow \max _{-1 \leq \zeta_{\ell} \leq 1}\left[\sum_{\ell=1}^{L} \zeta_{\ell}\left[\left[a^{\ell}\right]^{T} x-\beta^{\ell}\right]\right] \leq \beta^{0}-\left[a^{0}\right]^{T} x
$$

$$
\Longleftrightarrow \sum_{\ell=1}^{L}\left|\left[a^{\ell}\right]^{T} x-\beta^{\ell}\right| \leq \beta^{0}-\left[a^{0}\right]^{T} x
$$

$$
\Longleftrightarrow\left[a^{0}\right]^{T} x+\sum_{\ell=1}^{L}\left|\left[a^{\ell}\right]^{T} x-\beta^{\ell}\right| \leq \beta^{0}
$$

$$
\Longleftrightarrow\left[a^{0}\right]^{T} x+\sum_{\ell=1}^{L} \underbrace{\left|\left[a^{\ell}\right]^{T} x-\beta^{\ell}\right|}_{u_{\ell}} \leq \beta^{0}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Longleftrightarrow\left[a^{0}\right]^{T} x+\sum_{\ell=1}^{L} u_{\ell} \leq \beta^{0} \text { and }-u_{\ell} \leq\left[a^{\ell}\right]^{T} x-\beta^{\ell} \leq u_{\ell}, \ell=1, \ldots, L \tag{2.4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that we started with a semi-infinite system of inequalities and ended up with a system of linear inequalities with a finite number of constraints and a finite number of variables (though there was some dramatic increase in the number of constraints and variables.).

Remark 2.4.4. A robust counterpart can change its character. The class of problem that a robust counterpart lies in depends on its perturbation set. For example, if the given perturbation set is an ellipsoid, the resulting constraint of the robust counterpart is a conic quadratic constraint. See [16, page 5] for a summary.

We considered a single linear inequality so far. Now suppose that more than one linear inequality of $A x \leq b$ are uncertain and each uncertain inequality is associated with its own uncertainty set

$$
\mathcal{U}_{i}=\left\{\left[a_{i} ; b_{i}\right]=\left[a_{i}^{0} ; b_{i}^{0}\right]+\sum_{\ell=1}^{L} \zeta_{\ell}\left[a_{i}^{\ell} ; b_{i}^{\ell}\right]: \zeta \in \mathcal{Z}_{i}\right\},
$$

where $\left[a_{i}^{0} ; b_{i}^{0}\right]$ is the data of the $i$-th linear inequality of $A x \leq b$. We repeat (2.4.3) for each uncertain inequality. We note that each reformulation will require additional variables, $u$ 's.

## Robust Counterpart of a Special Case

Given a linear inequality $\langle a, x\rangle \leq \beta$, suppose that each coefficient of $a$ is uncertain and is known to vary in the interval $[-\epsilon, \epsilon]$, i.e.,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle\tilde{a}, x\rangle \leq \beta, \forall \tilde{a}_{i} \in\left[a_{i}-\epsilon, a_{i}+\epsilon\right], \forall i \in[n] . \tag{2.4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then the robust counterpart of (2.4.4) can be rewritten as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max \left\{\langle\tilde{a}, x\rangle: \tilde{a}_{i} \in\left[a_{i}-\epsilon, a_{i}+\epsilon\right], \forall i \in[n]\right\} \leq \beta \tag{2.4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

We may introduce additional variables and turn the semi-infinite constraint (2.4.5) into a finite system of linear deterministic inequalities as shown in (2.4.3). However in a special case, we have a simpler way to reformulate (2.4.5). Rewriting (2.4.5) gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle a, x\rangle+\max \left\{\langle u, x\rangle: u \in\left\{y:\|y\|_{\infty} \leq \epsilon\right\}\right\} \leq \beta \tag{2.4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

We use the notion of dual norm to convert (2.4.6).
Definition 2.4.5 (dual norm). Let $\|\cdot\|$ be an arbitrary norm on $\mathbb{R}^{n}$. The dual norm $\|\cdot\|^{*}$ of $\|\cdot\|$ is defined by

$$
\|s\|^{*}:=\max \{\langle s, x\rangle:\|x\| \leq 1\}
$$

It is well-known that the dual norm of the $\ell_{\infty}$ norm is the $\ell_{1}$ norm:

$$
\|x\|_{\infty}^{*}=\|x\|_{1 .} .
$$

Therefore, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\max \left\{\langle u, x\rangle: u \in\left\{y:\|y\|_{\infty} \leq \epsilon\right\}\right\} & =\max \left\{\langle u, x\rangle: u \in \epsilon\left\{y:\|y\|_{\infty} \leq 1\right\}\right\} \\
& =\epsilon \cdot \max \left\{\langle u, x\rangle: u \in\left\{y:\|y\|_{\infty} \leq 1\right\}\right\} \\
& =\epsilon\|x\|_{\infty}^{*} \\
& =\epsilon\|x\|_{1} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence, (2.4.6) becomes

$$
\langle a, x\rangle+\epsilon\|x\|_{1} \leq \beta .
$$

If we impose nonnegativity on the variable $x$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle a, x\rangle+\epsilon\langle e, x\rangle \leq \beta \tag{2.4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

It is easy to see that if the given inequality is of the form $a^{T} x \geq \beta$ (i.e., with the opposite inequality), its robust counterpart is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\min \left\{\langle\tilde{a}, x\rangle: \tilde{a}_{i} \in\left[a_{i}-\epsilon, a_{i}+\epsilon\right], \forall i \in[n]\right\} \geq \beta \tag{2.4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is equivalent to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle a, x\rangle-\epsilon\langle e, x\rangle \geq \beta \tag{2.4.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

We note that if $a=\epsilon e$ and $\beta>0,(2.4 .9)$ is violated. In this case, $x$ is not robust feasible since $x$ does not satisfy all possible realizations of uncertain data. We will frequently make use of (2.4.7) and (2.4.9) later. We also note that (2.4.7) and (2.4.9) are in a nice parametric form.

## Optimistic Counterpart

The contents in this section are not needed until Section 4.5.4. Readers may want to come back to this section later.

Given an uncertainty set $\mathcal{U}$, define the following $\mathbf{L P}(P)$ :

$$
\begin{array}{cl}
\min _{x} & g(x)  \tag{2.4.10}\\
\text { subject to } & f_{i}\left(x ; u_{i}\right) \geq 0, i=1, \ldots, m, u_{i} \in \mathcal{U}, x \in \mathbb{R}^{n} .
\end{array}
$$

Definition 2.4.6 (optimistic feasible solution, [4]). A vector $x$ is an optimistic feasible solution of $(P)$ if it satisfies the constraints for at least one realization of the uncertainty set. That is, $x$ is an optimistic feasible solution if, and only if, for every $i=1, \ldots, m$, $f_{i}\left(x ; u_{i}\right) \geq 0$ for some $u_{i} \in \mathcal{U}$.

The optimistic counterpart of problem $(P)$ consists of minimizing the best possible objective function (i.e., minimum with respect to the parameters) over the set of optimistic feasible solutions:

$$
\begin{array}{cl}
\min _{x} & \min _{u \in \mathcal{U}} g(x)  \tag{2.4.11}\\
\text { subject to } & f_{i}\left(x ; u_{i}\right) \geq 0 \text { for some } u_{i} \in \mathcal{U}_{i}, i=1, \ldots, m .
\end{array}
$$

Let the constraint system in $(P)$ is given by $A x-b \geq 0$. Let $\langle a, x\rangle \geq \beta$ be one of the inequalities of $A x-b \geq 0$. Suppose that each coefficient of $a$ is uncertain and is known to vary in the interval $[-\epsilon, \epsilon]$, i.e.,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle\tilde{a}, x\rangle \geq \beta, \forall \tilde{a}_{i} \in\left[a_{i}-\epsilon, a_{i}+\epsilon\right], \forall i \in[n] . \tag{2.4.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, the optimistic counterpart of (2.4.12) can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max \left\{\langle\tilde{a}, x\rangle: \tilde{a}_{i} \in\left[a_{i}-\epsilon, a_{i}+\epsilon\right], \forall i \in[n]\right\} \geq \beta \tag{2.4.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that 'max' was used in (2.4.13) (in optimistic counterpart), while 'min' was used in (2.4.8) (in robust counterpart). If we impose nonnegativity on the variables, we have the
following:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\max \left\{\langle u, x\rangle: u \in\left\{y:\|y\|_{\infty} \leq \epsilon\right\}\right\} & =\max \left\{\langle u, x\rangle: u \in \epsilon\left\{y:\|y\|_{\infty} \leq 1\right\}\right\} \\
& =\epsilon \cdot \max \left\{\langle u, x\rangle: u \in\left\{y:\|y\|_{\infty} \leq 1\right\}\right\} \\
& =\epsilon\|x\|_{\infty}^{*} \\
& =\epsilon\|x\|_{1} \\
& =\epsilon\langle e, x\rangle .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence, the uncertain inequality becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle a, x\rangle+\epsilon\langle e, x\rangle \geq \beta . \tag{2.4.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

We will make use of (2.4.14) in Section 4.5.4.

### 2.5 Linear Sensitivity Analysis

$\mathbf{L P}$ sensitivity analysis is a very well-established field. There is a considerable amount of literature on LP sensitivity analysis. There is a literature even dating back to 1954 by Saaty and Gass [27] and to 1956 by Mills [23]. A reader may refer to [2, 13, 20, 21, 31] for general understanding in this field. Arsham and Oblak [2] suggested classifications in LP postoptimal analysis (See Table 2.5.1.). A book by Gal [14] contains comprehensive arguments on postoptimal analysis with an ample number of examples.

Classical sensitivity analysis questioned how much given data could be perturbed while keeping the current optimal basis. However this approach has a grave shortcoming: In the presence of degeneracy(i.e., the existence of multiple optimal bases) of the primal optimal solution, we might get incorrect information in terms of sensitivity. A good example is illustrated in the short paper by Strum [30]. An approach using an optimal partition was suggested to remove the concerns that arise with the degeneracy of the optimal solution by Jansen et al. [21].

Most of the classical sensitivity analysis is performed on the RHS vector or the objective vector changes using the simplex tableau. In addition, we often encounter sensitivity analysis on only one component of the RHS vector or the objective vector for easier analysis. When the RHS (the cost vector, respectively) is perturbed, only the RHS (the cost vector, respectively) is affected in the final tableau. However, when matrix coefficients are perturbed, not only the matrix coefficients are affected but also both the RHS and the cost vector are affected in the final tableau. Moreover, there could be some additional implicit constraints imposed on each matrix coefficient due to the modelling. Hence, sensitivity analysis on the matrix coefficients using bases is relatively less studied because the analysis is more complex.

There are many interesting statements; one parameter change in the RHS and the cost vector yield the optimal value function to be piecewise linear convex and concave, respectively (A reader may refer to [31] for properties.). However, matrix coefficient changes
$\left.\left.\begin{array}{|c|}\hline \text { Perturbation Analysis } \\ \hline \text { Tolerance Analysis } \\ \hline \begin{array}{c}\text { Symmetric Tolerance Analysis } \\ \text { Allowable change in one RHS } \\ \text { or cost or/and element of } \\ \text { matrix coefficient } A\end{array} \\ \begin{array}{c}\text { Simultaneous change in a given direction } \\ \text { for RHS or cost or coefficients of matrix } A\end{array} \\ \text { RHS and/or cost and/or coefficients of matrix } A\end{array}\right] \begin{array}{c}\text { Allowable percentage change in either direction for } \\ \text { each RHS, cost and/or coefficients of matrix } A\end{array}\right]$

Table 2.5.1: Hierarchy in LP postoptimal analysis suggested by Arsham and Oblak [2]. Parametric analysis is often referred as sensitivity analysis.
do not guarantee the convexity nor concavity of the optimal value function and the optimal value function is often nonlinear (See the example in [32].). We can also find an example that the optimal value function is not even continuous with respect to the changes in matrix coefficients (See [14, Example 8-2].).

The sensitivity of an $\mathbf{L P}$ heavily relies on the dual optimal solutions. Each component of dual optimal solutions is often referred as the shadow price (or marginal value, Lagrange multiplier) associated with a particular constraint. The Shadow price plays an important role in analysis of economic models. It gives the change in the optimal value function per unit increase in the RHS value for a specific constraint, while all other problem data remains unchanged. A recent paper by Gisbert et al [15] contains the calmness of objective value function in the variation of the objective vector and the RHS vector based on sets of dual optimal solutions (A reader who wishes to explore the definition of calmness may refer to [26, Section 8.F].).

Regardless of perturbations on the RHS, the objective vector or the matrix coefficients, we see that the dual optimal solutions play a very important role in sensitivity analysis. Hence, when we have a full knowledge on the set of primal-dual optimal solutions, the
sensitivity analysis gets easier. In this thesis, we study the sensitivity of the optimal value function over all the matrix coefficients. Freund [12] performed the postoptimal analysis under simultaneous changes in matrix coefficients involving the optimal bases. In the case of nondegeneracy, Freund suggests a very easy analysis. However, as we mentioned above, postoptimal analysis using the bases is difficult when the degeneracy is present. De Wolf [32] suggested a formula using the generalized gradient for sensitivity analysis without involving arguments on bases in the statement. However it requires full knowledge on the set of primal-dual optimal solutions. In this thesis, we extensively use the results given in $[12,32]$. The results from $[12,32]$ will be stated in Chapter 4.

## Chapter 3

## Construction of Cones and the Properties of Constructed Cones

### 3.1 Generating the Polyhedral Cones

We now generate proper polyhedral cones with special properties that allow us to control their sizes. In other words, we generate proper cones satisfying the strict containment using a parameter (or an angle) in ( $0, \pi / 2$ ). In Sections 3.1.1 and 3.1.2, we show how we build the desired cones that hold the strict containment; while in Section 3.1.3 we study some of the properties of these cones.

### 3.1.1 Construction of Generator $c$ in a Two-Dimensional Subspace

We first focus on a two-dimensional subspace of $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ and construct a unit vector $c$ to be used to generate the polyhedral cone. Suppose that we are given two orthonormal vectors $\bar{w}$ and $w^{\prime},\left(\left\langle\bar{w}, w^{\prime}\right\rangle=0,\|\bar{w}\|=\left\|w^{\prime}\right\|=1\right)$, and the scalar $\theta \in(0, \pi / 2)$. We want to find a vector $c \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$ such that $c$ lies in $\operatorname{span}\left(\left\{\bar{w}, w^{\prime}\right\}\right)$ and the angle between $c$ and $\bar{w}$ is $\theta$, i.e.,

$$
c=\alpha \bar{w}+\beta w^{\prime}, \quad \text { for some } \alpha, \beta \in \mathbb{R}, \text { and } \arccos \left(\frac{\langle c, \bar{w}\rangle}{\|c\|\|\bar{w}\|}\right)=\theta
$$

Then letting $\cos (\theta)=\alpha / 1$ and $\sin (\theta)=\beta / 1$ gives the desired vector $c$ (See Figure 3.1.1.);

$$
\begin{equation*}
c=\cos (\theta) \bar{w}+\sin (\theta) w^{\prime} . \tag{3.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 3.1.2 Building a Polyhedral Cone

We assume that the vectors satisfying the following hypothesis are given.


Figure 3.1.1: Given $\bar{w}$ and $w^{\prime}$ satisfying $\left\langle\bar{w}, w^{\prime}\right\rangle=0$ : construction of $c$ such that $\langle c, \bar{w}\rangle=$ $\cos \theta$.

Hypothesis 3.1.1. Let $\mathcal{K}=\{1, \ldots, k\}$, and suppose we are given $k$ distinct unit vectors $w^{1}, \ldots, w^{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$ such that the following hold:
(1) $k \geq n$,
(2) $\left\|w^{i}\right\|=1, \forall i \in \mathcal{K}$,
(3) $\operatorname{dim}\left(\operatorname{span}\left(\left\{w^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{K}}\right)\right)=n-1$,
(4) $0 \in \operatorname{relint} \operatorname{conv}\left(\left\{w^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{K}}\right)$.

Remark 3.1.2. For the case $n=2$, we note that $k$ cannot be greater than 2 . If $k>n=2$, then (2) and (3) of Hypothesis 3.1.1 and the assumption'distinct vectors $w^{1}, \ldots, w^{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$, cannot be satisfied simultaneously.

By Item (3) of Hypothesis 3.1.1, the set $\left\{w^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}}$ spans a $n-1$ dimensional subspace of $\mathbb{R}^{n}$, that is, we can fix $\bar{w} \in \mathbb{R}^{n},\|\bar{w}\|=1$ such that the orthogonal complement

$$
\bar{w}^{\perp}=\operatorname{span}\left(\left\{w^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{K}}\right) .
$$

Given $\theta \in(0, \pi / 2)$, for each $i=1, \ldots, k$, we define

$$
\begin{equation*}
c^{i}:=\cos \theta \bar{w}+\sin \theta w^{i} . \tag{3.1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

We note that $\left\langle c^{i}, \bar{w}\right\rangle=\cos \theta$, for each $i=1, \ldots, n$. We construct the desired polyhedral cone using the $c^{i}$ 's, i.e., as a convex hull of the rays $\operatorname{ray}\left(c^{i}\right), \forall i=1, \ldots, k$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
K=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i=1, \ldots, k}\right) . \tag{3.1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

We study the properties of these generated cones $K$ in Section 3.1.3, below. In the rest of this section, we present a simple example and discuss how we may generate data that satisfies our Hypothesis 3.1.1.

Example 3.1.3. Suppose that the following vectors and angle are given:

$$
w^{1}=\left(\begin{array}{l}
1  \tag{3.1.4}\\
0 \\
0
\end{array}\right), w^{2}=\left(\begin{array}{l}
0 \\
1 \\
0
\end{array}\right), w^{3}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
-1 \\
0 \\
0
\end{array}\right), w^{4}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
0 \\
-1 \\
0
\end{array}\right), \quad \theta=\pi / 6
$$

Let $\bar{w}=(0,0,1)^{T}$ and define vectors

$$
c^{i}:=\cos \theta \bar{w}+\sin \theta w^{i}=\frac{\sqrt{3}}{2} \bar{w}+\frac{1}{2} w^{i}, \forall i=1, \ldots, 4 .
$$

Then we have

$$
c^{1}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
1 / 2 \\
0 \\
\sqrt{3} / 2
\end{array}\right), c^{2}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
0 \\
1 / 2 \\
\sqrt{3} / 2
\end{array}\right), c^{3}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
-1 / 2 \\
0 \\
\sqrt{3} / 2
\end{array}\right), c^{4}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
0 \\
-1 / 2 \\
\sqrt{3} / 2
\end{array}\right) .
$$

We define $K:=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i=1, \ldots, 4}\right)$ (See Figure 3.1.2.).


Figure 3.1.2: The cone constructed in $\mathbb{R}^{3}$ from the given data in (3.1.4).

We can generate a vector $\bar{w}$ and $k$ vectors $w^{i}$ satisfying Hypothesis 3.1.1 as follows. Our first goal is to generate a matrix $\widehat{W} \in \mathbb{R}^{(n-1) \times k}$ and a vector $\hat{\lambda} \in \mathbb{R}_{++}^{k}$ such that

1. each column of $\widehat{W}$ is of length 1 ,
2. $\operatorname{rank}(\widehat{W})=n-1$,
3. $\widehat{W} \hat{\lambda}=0$, and
4. $\sum_{i=1}^{k} \hat{\lambda}_{i}=1$.

This means that 0 is in the relative interior of $\operatorname{conv}\left(\{\widehat{W}(:, i)\}_{i \in \mathcal{K}}\right)$. We generate such a matrix $\widehat{W}$ as follows: We first generate a vector $\lambda \in \mathbb{R}_{++}^{k}$. Then the null space of $\lambda^{T}$ has
$k-1$ basis elements. We choose any $n-1$ basis elements of null $\left(\lambda^{T}\right)$. We form an $(n-1) \times k$ matrix $W_{s}$, where each row is a basis element chosen above. We form a $k \times k$ diagonal matrix $S$ such that each diagonal element is the norm of each column of $W_{s} \in \mathbb{R}^{(n-1) \times k}$. Define

$$
\widehat{W}:=W_{s} S^{-1} \text { and } \hat{\lambda}:=\frac{S \lambda}{\sum_{i=1}^{k}(S \lambda)_{i}}
$$

Then, we have that each column of $\widehat{W}$ is of length $1, \operatorname{rank}(\widehat{W})=n-1$, and 0 is the strict convex combination of columns of $\widehat{W}$ as desired.

We now lift the dimension of column vectors of $\widehat{W}$ to $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ by adding zero coordinates to each column of $\widehat{W}$, i.e.,

$$
w^{i}:=\left[\begin{array}{c}
\widehat{W}(:, i) \\
0
\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{n}, \forall i=1, \ldots, k
$$

Then, letting $\bar{w}=[0, \ldots, 0,1]^{T} \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$ yields $\left\langle w^{i}, \bar{w}\right\rangle=0, \forall i=1, \ldots, k$. We generate an orthogonal matrix $O \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n}$ and obtain

$$
\bar{w} \leftarrow O \bar{w}, \text { and } w^{i} \leftarrow O w^{i}, \forall i=1, \ldots, k
$$

One may obtain an orthogonal matrix $O$ by performing QR decomposition of an $n \times n$ matrix $A$, i.e., $O:=Q$, where $A=Q R$. Then we have a vector $\bar{w}$ and $k$ vectors $w^{i}$ as desired. Algorithm 3.1.1 shows the computational steps explained above.

```
Algorithm 3.1.1: Generate Vectors Satisfying Hypothesis 3.1.1 and \(\bar{w}\)
    Input: \(n\) : dimension,
            \(k\) : number of vectors in Hypothesis 3.1.1 we wish to generate
    Generate a vector \(\lambda \in \mathbb{R}_{++}^{k}\)
    Let \(W_{0}\) be the matrix such that each column of \(W_{0}\) is a basis element for null \(\left(\lambda^{T}\right)\)
    Let \(W_{s}:=W_{0}(\mathcal{I},:)\), for some \(|\mathcal{I}|=n-1\) and \(\mathcal{I} \subset\{1, \ldots, k\}\)
    Let \(S \in \mathbb{R}^{k \times k}\) be a diagonal matrix such that \(S(i, i)=\left\|W_{s}(i,:)\right\|, \forall i \in\{1, \ldots, k\}\)
    Let \(\widehat{W}=W_{s} S^{-1}\)
    \(W=\left[\begin{array}{c}\widehat{W} \\ \mathbf{0}_{k}^{T}\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times k}, \bar{w}=\left[\begin{array}{c}\mathbf{0}_{n-1} \\ 1\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{n}\)
    Generate an orthogonal matrix \(O \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n}\)
    \(W \leftarrow O W, \bar{w} \leftarrow O \bar{w}\)
    Return: a matrix \(W \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times k}\) such that each column \(w^{i}\) corresponds to a vector
                in Hypothesis 3.1.1,
                a vector \(\bar{w}\) orthogonal to \(w^{i}, \forall i \in\{1, \ldots, k\}\)
```


### 3.1.3 Properties of the Constructed Cone

In this section, we study some properties of the cone $K=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i=1, \ldots, k}\right)$ constructed in Section 3.1.2.


Figure 3.1.3: arccos function

The next theorem shows that the $c^{i}$ 's constructed in (3.1.2) are, in fact, extremal vectors of $K$.

Theorem 3.1.4. Let $K=$ cone $\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i=1, \ldots, k}\right)$ be the cone constructed in (3.1.3). Then each $c^{i}, i=1, \ldots, k$, is an extremal vector of $K$.

Proof. Let $I$ be the subset of the indices $\{1, \ldots, k\}$. We proceed by induction on $|I|$. Suppose that $|I|=1$. Then $K=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{1}\right\}\right)$ and $c^{1}$ is clearly an extremal vector of $K$. Suppose that $K=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i \in I}\right)$ with $I=\{1, \ldots, j-1\}$ and each $c^{i}$, where $i \in I$, is an extremal vector of $K$. Let $K^{\prime}=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i \in I^{\prime}}\right)$ with $I^{\prime}=I \cup\{j\}$. Suppose to the contrary that there is a member in $\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i \in I^{\prime}}$ that is not an extremal vector of $K^{\prime}$. Without loss of generality, we let $c^{j}$ be such a member, i.e., $c^{j}$ is not an extremal vector of $K^{\prime}$. By Lemma 2.1.23, we have

$$
\gamma c^{j}=\sum_{i \in I} \lambda_{i} c^{i} \text { for some } \gamma>0, \text { with } \lambda_{i} \geq 0 \text { and } \sum_{i \in I} \lambda_{i}=1 .
$$

Note that $\arccos \left(\frac{\left\langle c^{i}, \bar{w}\right\rangle}{\left\|c^{i}\right\|\|\bar{w}\|}\right)=\theta$, i.e., $\left\langle c^{i}, \bar{w}\right\rangle=\cos \theta, \forall i \in I^{\prime}$. Thus we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\theta & =\arccos \left(\frac{\left\langle\gamma c^{j}, \bar{w}\right\rangle}{\left\|\gamma c^{j}\right\|\|\bar{w}\|}\right) \\
& =\arccos \left(\frac{\sum_{i \in I} \lambda_{i}\left\langle c^{i}, \bar{w}\right\rangle}{\left\|\gamma c^{j}\right\|}\right) \\
& =\arccos \left(\frac{\sum_{i \in I} \lambda_{i} \cos \theta}{\left\|\gamma c^{j}\right\|}\right)  \tag{3.1.5}\\
& =\arccos \left(\frac{\sum_{i \in I} \lambda_{i}\left\|c^{i}\right\| \cos \theta}{\left\|\sum_{i \in I} \lambda_{i} c^{i}\right\|}\right) \\
& <\arccos \left(\frac{\sum_{i \in I} \lambda_{i}\left\|c^{i}\right\| \cos \theta}{\sum_{i \in I} \lambda_{i}\left\|c^{i}\right\|}\right) \\
& =\arccos (\cos \theta) \\
& =\theta .
\end{align*}
$$

The strict inequality holds, since arccos is strictly decreasing (See Figure 3.1.3.) and

$$
\left\|\gamma c^{j}\right\|=\left\|\sum_{i \in I} \lambda_{i} c^{i}\right\|<\sum_{i \in I} \lambda_{i}\left\|c^{i}\right\|,
$$

since $c^{i}$ and $c^{\ell}$ are not collinear for all $i \neq \ell$. Therefore the strict inequality yields a contradiction and so $c^{j}$ is an extremal vector of $K^{\prime}$.

We state a necessary condition for an element in $K$.
Lemma 3.1.5. Let each $c^{i}$ be constructed by (3.1.2). If $x \in K=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i=1, \ldots, k}\right)$, then

$$
\arccos \left(\frac{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle}{\|\bar{w}\|\|x\|}\right) \leq \theta
$$

Proof. We showed in Theorem 3.1.4 that $\left\{c^{1}, \ldots, c^{k}\right\}$ is the set of extremal vectors of $K$.

Then $x=\sum_{i=1}^{k} \lambda_{i} c^{i}$, for some $\lambda \geq 0$. Thus we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\langle w, x\rangle}{\|\bar{w}\|\|x\|} & =\frac{\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left\langle\bar{w}, \lambda_{i} c^{i}\right\rangle}{\|\bar{w}\|\|x\|} \\
& =\frac{\sum_{i=1}^{k} \lambda_{i}\left\langle\bar{w}, c^{i}\right\rangle}{\|x\|} \\
& =\frac{\sum_{i=1}^{k} \lambda_{i} \cos \theta}{\|x\|} \\
& =\frac{\sum_{i=1}^{k} \lambda_{i}\left\|c^{i}\right\| \cos \theta}{\|x\|} \\
& \geq \frac{\sum_{i=1}^{k} \lambda_{i}\left\|c^{i}\right\| \cos \theta}{\sum_{i=1}^{k} \lambda_{i}\left\|c^{i}\right\|} \\
& =\cos \theta
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence $\arccos \left(\frac{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle}{\|\bar{w}\|\|x\|}\right) \leq \arccos (\cos \theta)=\theta$.
We can also show that $K$ is a full-dimensional and pointed cone, i.e., a proper cone. We first show that $K$ is full-dimensional.

Lemma 3.1.6 ([25, Theorem 2.4]). The dimension of a convex set $C \subseteq \mathbb{R}^{n}$ is the maximum of the dimensions of the all simplices included in $C$.

Lemma 3.1.7. Let $K$ be the cone constructed in (3.1.3). Then $K$ is a full-dimensional cone.

Proof. By Items (3) and (4) of Hypothesis 3.1.1, there exists a set $\left\{u^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}}$ of $n$ affinely independent vectors $u^{i}$ in relint conv $\left(\left\{w^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{K}}\right)$ (of dimension $n-1$ ). We can choose vectors $u^{i}$ of the same length and let $\bar{u}=\gamma \bar{w}$ satisfy $\|\bar{u}\|=\|\gamma \bar{w}\|=\left\|u^{i}\right\|, \forall i \in \mathcal{I}$. Define

$$
S:=\left\{\cos \theta \bar{u}+\sin \theta u^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}} .
$$

We show that $S$ is a set of linearly independent vectors in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$. Since $\left\{u^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}}$ is the set of affinely independent vectors,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i \in \mathcal{I} \backslash n} \alpha_{i}\left(u^{i}-u^{n}\right)=0 \Longrightarrow \alpha_{i}=0, \forall i=1, \ldots, n-1 \tag{3.1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

In order to show that $S$ is a set of linearly independent vectors in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$, suppose that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i \in \mathcal{I}} \beta_{i}\left(\cos \theta \bar{u}+\sin \theta u^{i}\right)=0 . \tag{3.1.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
0 & =\sum_{i \in \mathcal{I}} \beta_{i}\left(\cos \theta \bar{u}+\sin \theta u^{i}-\sin \theta u^{n}+\sin \theta u^{n}\right)  \tag{3.1.8}\\
& =\sum_{i \in \mathcal{I}} \beta_{i}\left(\left(\cos \theta \bar{u}+\sin \theta u^{n}\right)+\sin \theta\left(u^{i}-u^{n}\right)\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

Then, by rearranging the terms in (3.1.8), we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i=1}^{n} \beta_{i} \sin \theta\left(u^{i}-u^{n}\right)=\sum_{i=1}^{n}-\beta_{i}\left(\cos \theta \bar{u}+\sin \theta u^{n}\right) \tag{3.1.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

We note that the LHS of (3.1.9) is equal to $\sum_{i=1}^{n-1} \beta_{i} \sin \theta\left(u^{i}-u^{n}\right)$. We also note that

$$
\left(\cos \theta \bar{u}+\sin \theta u^{n}\right) \notin \operatorname{span}\left(\left\{u^{i}-u^{n}\right\}_{i=1, \ldots, n-1}\right) .
$$

Therefore, (3.1.9) holds only when both sides of (3.1.9) are equal to zero. Thus we get

$$
\sum_{i=1}^{n-1} \beta_{i}\left(u^{i}-u^{n}\right)=0 \Longrightarrow \beta_{i}=0, \forall i=1, \ldots, n-1
$$

by (3.1.6). It follows from (3.1.9) that $\beta_{n}=0$. Therefore, $S$ is a set of linearly independent vectors in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$.

We note that conv $(S \cup\{0\})$ is a simplex in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$, and conv $(S \cup\{0\}) \subset K$. Therefore, by Lemma 3.1.6, $K$ is a full-dimensional cone.

Theorem 3.1.8. Let $K=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i=1 \ldots, k}\right)$ be constructed by (3.1.2). Then $K$ is a pointed cone.

Proof. Suppose to the contrary that there is a nonzero unit vector $x$ such that $x \in K$ and $-x \in K$. Note that for all $y \in K$, we have $\frac{\langle y, \bar{w}\rangle}{\|y\|\|\bar{w}\|} \geq \cos \theta$ by Lemma 3.1.5. Then

$$
\langle x, \bar{w}\rangle \geq \cos \theta \text { and }-\langle x, \bar{w}\rangle \geq \cos \theta
$$

so we have

$$
\cos \theta \leq\langle x, \bar{w}\rangle \leq-\cos \theta
$$

This yields a contradiction since the inequalities hold only when $\langle x, \bar{w}\rangle=\cos \theta=0$ but $\theta \in(0, \pi / 2)$.

We also have a special element in the interior of $K$.
Lemma 3.1.9. Let $K=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i=1, \ldots, k}\right)$ be constructed by (3.1.2). Then, $\bar{w} \in \operatorname{int}(K)$.
Proof. By Items (3) and (4) of Hypothesis 3.1.1, there exists a set $\left\{u^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}}$ of $n$ affinely independent vectors $u^{i}$ in relint conv $\left(\left\{w^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{K}}\right)$. We can choose vectors $u^{i}$ of the same
length and let $\bar{u}=\gamma \bar{w}$ be satisfying $\|\bar{u}\|=\|\gamma \bar{w}\|=\left\|u^{i}\right\|, \forall i \in \mathcal{I}$. Define

$$
s^{i}:=\cos \theta \bar{u}+\sin \theta u^{i}, \forall i \in \mathcal{I} .
$$

We can find $\lambda \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
0=\sum_{i=1}^{n} \lambda_{i} u^{i}, \text { for some } \lambda_{i}>0 \text { and } \sum_{i=1}^{n} \lambda_{i}=1 \tag{3.1.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

By summing $\lambda_{i} s^{i}=\lambda_{i}\left(\cos \theta \bar{u}+\sin \theta u^{i}\right), \forall i \in \mathcal{I}$, we have

$$
\sum_{i=1}^{n} \lambda_{i} s^{i}=\sum_{i=1}^{n} \cos \theta \lambda_{i} \bar{u}+\sum_{i=1}^{n} \sin \theta \lambda_{i} u^{i} .
$$

Then, with (3.1.10), we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\cos \theta \bar{u}=\sum_{i=1}^{n} \lambda_{i} s^{i} \tag{3.1.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $z$ be any positive real number satisfying $1-\sum_{i=1}^{n} \lambda_{i} / z>0$. By dividing both sides of (3.1.11) by $z$, we have

$$
\frac{\cos \theta}{z} \bar{u}=\sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{\lambda_{i}}{z} s^{i}=\sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{\lambda_{i}}{z} s^{i}+\left(1-\sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{\lambda_{i}}{z}\right) 0 .
$$

We note that the coefficients of $s^{i}$ 's and 0 lie in the interval $(0,1)$. Hence $\frac{\cos \theta}{z} \bar{u}$ is in the interior of the simplex conv $\left(0 \cup\left\{\frac{\lambda_{i}}{z} s^{i}\right\}_{i=1, \ldots, n}\right)$. Therefore $\bar{w}$ is in the interior of the cone $K$.

Remark 3.1.10. The properties of $K$ shown in this section hold for every cone constructed by (3.1.3) with any $\theta \in(0, \pi / 2)$.

Given a cone $K$ constructed by (3.1.2), we would like to construct a cone $K^{\prime} \supsetneq K$, that is bigger than $K$. Let $\bar{\theta} \in(0, \pi / 2)$ such that $\bar{\theta}>\theta$. We copy the construction (3.1.2) with $\theta$ replaced by $\bar{\theta}$, and then obtain $d^{i}$ (See Figure 3.1.4.), i.e.,

$$
\begin{equation*}
d^{i}=\cos \bar{\theta} \bar{w}+\sin \bar{\theta} w^{i} . \tag{3.1.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

We define two sets in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ and two corresponding $n \times k$ matrices,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathcal{C}:=\left\{c^{1}, \ldots, c^{k}\right\} \quad \text { and } \quad \mathcal{D}:=\left\{d^{1}, \ldots, d^{k}\right\}, \\
& C:=\left[\begin{array}{lll}
c^{1} & \cdots & c^{k}
\end{array}\right] \text { and } D:=\left[\begin{array}{lll}
d^{1} & \cdots & d^{k}
\end{array}\right] \text {. }
\end{aligned}
$$

Throughout this thesis, we do not rearrange the orders of columns in $C$ and $D$. That is, if $c^{i}$ is the $i$-th column of $C$, we place $d^{i}$ on $i$-th column of $D$. We always assume that


Figure 3.1.4: Construction of vector $d^{i}$ moved further from $c^{i}$. The figure on the right is an example in $\mathbb{R}^{3}$, where the dashed line and the solid line represent cone $(\mathcal{C})$ and cone $(\mathcal{D})$, respectively.
$\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C}) \subsetneq \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})$, unless stated otherwise. We often denote

$$
\begin{align*}
& \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C})=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i \in I}\right)=\left\{z \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: \exists \lambda \geq 0 \text { such that } z=C \lambda\right\}  \tag{3.1.13}\\
& \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{d^{i}\right\}_{i \in I}\right)=\left\{z \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: \exists \lambda \geq 0 \text { such that } z=D \lambda\right\} \tag{3.1.14}
\end{align*}
$$

In addition, we interchangeably use the expressions in (3.1.13) and (3.1.14), when the meaning is clear.

Example 3.1.11. Let the following be the given data:

$$
\bar{w}=\binom{0}{1}, w^{1}=\binom{1}{0}, w^{2}=\binom{-1}{0}, \theta=\frac{\pi}{4}, \bar{\theta}=\frac{\pi}{3} .
$$

Then, by using (3.1.2) and (3.1.12), we have

$$
c^{1}=\binom{\sqrt{2} / 2}{\sqrt{2} / 2}, c^{2}=\binom{-\sqrt{2} / 2}{\sqrt{2} / 2}, d^{1}=\binom{1 / 2}{\sqrt{3} / 2}, d^{2}=\binom{-1 / 2}{\sqrt{3} / 2}
$$

and let

$$
\mathcal{C}=\left\{c^{1}, c^{2}\right\}, \mathcal{D}=\left\{d^{1}, d^{2}\right\}, C=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\sqrt{2} / 2 & -\sqrt{2} / 2 \\
\sqrt{2} / 2 & \sqrt{2} / 2
\end{array}\right], D=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
1 / 2 & -1 / 2 \\
\sqrt{3} / 2 & \sqrt{3} / 2
\end{array}\right] .
$$

With $\mathcal{C}, \mathcal{D} \subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ and $C, D \in \mathbb{R}^{2 \times 2}$ above, we interchangeably use the notations

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C})=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i=1,2}\right)=\left\{z \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: \exists \lambda \geq 0 \text { such that } z=C \lambda\right\} \\
& \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{d^{i}\right\}_{i=1,2}\right)=\left\{z \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: \exists \lambda \geq 0 \text { such that } z=D \lambda\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

The following theorem guarantees that whenever we have $\bar{\theta}>\theta$, we can always construct
a set of two cones of different sizes: one strictly contains the other. In other words, we can control the sizes (or containment) of the cones we wish to study.

Theorem 3.1.12. Let cone $(\mathcal{C})$ and cone $(\mathcal{D})$ be the cones generated by the vectors constructed by (3.1.2) and (3.1.12), respectively. Then

$$
\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C}) \subsetneq \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})
$$

Proof. By the construction of $c^{i}$ and $d^{i}$, we have $\operatorname{ray}\left(c^{i}\right) \in \operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{\bar{w}, d^{i}\right\}\right)$. Since $\bar{w} \in$ cone $(\mathcal{D})$, we have cone $(\{\bar{w}\} \cup \mathcal{D})=$ cone $(\mathcal{D})$. Hence, we get

$$
\operatorname{ray}\left(c^{i}\right) \in \operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{\bar{w}, d^{i}\right\}\right) \subset \operatorname{cone}(\{\bar{w}\} \cup \mathcal{D})=\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})
$$

Thus each $c^{i}$ can be written as

$$
c^{i}=\sum_{j=1}^{k} \mu_{j}^{i} d^{i}, \text { for some } \mu^{i} \geq 0
$$

Let $x \in \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C})$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
x & =\sum_{i=1}^{k} \lambda_{i} c^{i}, \text { for some } \lambda_{i} \geq 0 \\
& =\sum_{i=1}^{k} \lambda_{i}\left(\sum_{j=1}^{k} \mu_{j}^{i} d^{i}\right), \text { for some } \mu^{i} \geq 0 \\
& =\sum_{i=1}^{k} \sum_{j=1}^{k} \lambda_{i} \mu_{j}^{i} d^{i} \\
& =\sum_{s=1}^{k} \sigma_{s} d^{s}, \text { for some } \sigma \geq 0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore, cone $(\mathcal{C}) \subset$ cone $(\mathcal{D})$.
Since for each $i, \arccos \left(\left\langle\bar{w}, d^{i}\right\rangle\right)=\bar{\theta}>\theta$, so $d^{i} \notin \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C})$ by Lemma 3.1.5. Thus the strict containment follows.

So far we have described cones such as $K=\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C})$ using the convex hull of its extreme rays. Below, we want to use the cone $K$ as constraints for a feasible region of an LP. Each constraint of an $\mathbf{L P}$ is a halfspace. Therefore, we need to describe the cone $K$ as an intersection of halfspaces. We first check if the dual cone $K^{*}$ is a pointed cone. Given $K=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{1}, \ldots, c^{k}\right\}\right)$, Lemma 2.1.32 ensures that the dual cone $K^{*}$ is given by

$$
K^{*}=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}:\left(c^{i}\right)^{T} x \geq 0, i=1, \ldots, k\right\}=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: C^{T} x \geq 0\right\}
$$

Lemma 3.1.13. Given $K=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i \in I}\right), K^{*}$ is a pointed cone.
Proof. Suppose that there is $\bar{x} \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$ such that $\pm \bar{x} \in K^{*}$. Then $C^{T} \bar{x}=0$, where $i$-th row
of $C^{T}$ is $\left(c^{i}\right)^{T}$. Since $\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i \in I}$ spans $\mathbb{R}^{n}$, there is a square $n \times n$ submatrix $\bar{C}^{T}$ of $C^{T}$ such that $\bar{C}^{T} \bar{x}=0$. Hence $\bar{x}=0$.

Having a pointed dual cone, we can convert $K=$ cone $\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i \in I}\right)$ as an intersection of halfspaces using the procedure in Table 2.1.2. We include the table here for convenience:

$$
\begin{array}{ccc}
K=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i \in I}\right) & \xrightarrow[\|]{\text { Lemma 2.1.32 }} & K^{*}=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}:\left\langle c^{i}, x\right\rangle \geq 0, i \in I\right\} \\
\downarrow \text { Algorithm 2.1.1 } \\
K^{* *}=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}:\left\langle p^{j}, x\right\rangle \geq 0, j \in J\right\} & \stackrel{\text { Lemma 2.1.32 }}{\rightleftarrows} & K^{*}=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{p^{j}\right\}_{j \in J}\right)
\end{array}
$$

We recall that a proper cone in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ is nondegenerate, if exactly $n$ distinct halfspaces are active at its vertex. We present a characterization of a nondegenerate cone $K$.

Proposition 3.1.14. Given a proper cone $K=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i \in I}\right)$ in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$, the following are equivalent.
(1) $K$ is nondegenerate,
(2) $K$ has exactly $n$ extreme rays, i.e., $|I|=n$,
(3) $K^{*}$ is nondegenerate,
(4) $K^{*}$ has exactly $n$ extreme rays.

Proof. (1) $\Longrightarrow(2)$ holds by Lemma 2.1.36 and $(2) \Longrightarrow(1)$ holds by Corollary 2.1.37. $(3) \Longleftrightarrow(4)$ holds by replacing $K$ with $K^{*}$. $(2) \Longleftrightarrow(3)$ holds by Corollary 2.1.38.

So far, we constructed a proper cone given the vectors satisfying Hypothesis 3.1.1. The following remark states that given a proper nondegenerate cone, we can always find vectors satisfying Hypothesis 3.1.1.

Remark 3.1.15. ${ }^{1}$ Let $P$ be any proper nondegenerate cone in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ and let $a^{i}, \forall i=1, \ldots, n$, be its extremal vectors with length 1. Then, there exists a unit vector $\bar{a} \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$, a set of unit vectors $\left\{\hat{a}^{i}\right\}_{i=1, \ldots, n} \subset \mathbb{R}^{n}$, and a scalar $\theta \in(0, \pi / 2)$ such that $a^{i}=\cos \theta \bar{a}+\sin \theta \hat{a}^{i}$, $\forall i=1, \ldots, n$.

Proof. We note that $P=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{a^{i}\right\}_{i=1, \ldots, n}\right)$. We define $A^{T}:=\left[\begin{array}{lll}a^{1} & \cdots & a^{n}\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n}$. Consider the system $A x=\left(1 /\left\|A^{-1} e\right\|\right) e$. Since $A$ is a nonsingular matrix, there is a unique $\bar{x}$ satisfying the system. Note that $\|\bar{x}\|=1$ and let $\bar{a}=\bar{x}$. We also note that $\left\langle a^{i}, \bar{a}\right\rangle>0$ and $\left\langle a^{i}, \bar{a}\right\rangle \leq\left\|a^{i}\right\|\|\bar{a}\|=1$. If there exists $j \in\{1, \ldots, n\}$ such that $\left\langle a^{j}, \bar{a}\right\rangle=1$, then $\left\langle a^{i}, \bar{a}\right\rangle=1$,

[^2]$\forall i \in\{1, \ldots, n\}$. This yields $\bar{a}=a^{i}, \forall i \in\{1, \ldots, n\}$ and hence contradicts nonsingularity of $A$. Thus we have
$$
0<\left\langle a^{i}, \bar{a}\right\rangle<1, \forall i \in\{1, \ldots, n\} .
$$

In particular, we can find $\theta \in(0, \pi / 2)$ such that $\cos \theta=\left\langle a^{i}, \bar{a}\right\rangle, \forall i \in\{1, \ldots, n\}$. For each $i=1, \ldots, n$, we can also find a vector

$$
\hat{a}^{i} \in \operatorname{span}\left\{\bar{a}, \hat{a}^{i}\right\} \text { such that }\left\langle\bar{a}, \hat{a}^{i}\right\rangle=0 \text { and }\left\langle a^{i}, \hat{a}^{i}\right\rangle>0 .
$$

Thus we have the result.

### 3.2 Properties of Two Sets of Interests

In this section, we investigate some properties of two sets we intend to study. In the later chapters, the sets we are about to study turn out to be the sets of dual optimal solutions of LPs we wish to study. The dual optimal solutions play an important role in sensitivity analysis.

### 3.2.1 Relations between $\{y: C y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\}$ and $\{z: D z=\bar{w}, z \geq 0\}$

In this section, with the cones constructed in the previous section, we study special relations between the two polyhedral sets

$$
\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{k}: C y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\} \text { and }\left\{z \in \mathbb{R}^{k}: D z=\bar{w}, z \geq 0\right\}
$$

Lemma 3.2.1. If $\bar{w}=C y$ for some $y \geq 0$, then there exists $z(y) \geq 0$ such that $\bar{w}=$ $D z, z \geq y$. In particular, we can choose $z$ such that $z=\frac{\cos \bar{\theta}}{\cos \theta} y$.

Proof. Using (3.1.2), we write

$$
\begin{aligned}
\bar{w} & =C y \\
& =\sum_{i=1}^{k} y_{i} c^{i} \\
& =\sum_{i=1}^{k} y_{i}\left(\cos \theta \bar{w}+\sin \theta w^{i}\right) \\
& =\sum_{i=1}^{k} y_{i} \cos \theta \bar{w}+\sum_{i=1}^{k} y_{i} \sin \theta w^{i} .
\end{aligned}
$$

By rearranging the terms above (For simplicity, we use $\sum$ rather than $\sum_{i=1}^{k}$, when the meaning is clear.), we have

$$
\sum y_{i} \sin \theta w^{i}=\bar{w}-\sum y_{i} \cos \theta \bar{w}
$$

Thus $\sin \theta \sum y_{i} w^{i}=\eta \bar{w}$, for some $\eta \in \mathbb{R}$. Since $w^{i} \in \bar{w}^{\perp}, \forall i$, and $\sin \theta \neq 0$, the equality holds only when $\sum y_{i} w^{i}=0$.

We also note that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\cos \theta}{\cos \bar{\theta}} D y & =D y+\frac{\cos \theta-\cos \bar{\theta}}{\cos \bar{\theta}} D y \\
& =D y+\frac{\cos \theta-\cos \bar{\theta}}{\cos \bar{\theta}} \sum y_{i}\left(\cos \bar{\theta} \bar{w}+\sin \bar{\theta} w^{i}\right) \\
& =D y+(\cos \theta-\cos \bar{\theta}) \sum y_{i} \bar{w}+\frac{(\cos \theta-\cos \bar{\theta}) \sin \bar{\theta}}{\cos \bar{\theta}} \sum y_{i} w^{i} \\
& =D y+(\cos \theta-\cos \bar{\theta}) \sum y_{i} \bar{w},
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\begin{aligned}
\bar{w} & =C y \\
& =\sum y_{i}\left(\cos \theta \bar{w}+\sin \theta w^{i}\right) \\
& =\cos \theta \sum y_{i} \bar{w}+\sin \theta \sum y_{i} w^{i} \\
& =\cos \bar{\theta} \sum y_{i} \bar{w}+\sin \bar{\theta} \sum y_{i} w^{i}+(\cos \theta-\cos \bar{\theta}) \sum y_{i} \bar{w}+(\sin \theta-\sin \bar{\theta}) \sum y_{i} w^{i} \\
& =D y+(\cos \theta-\cos \bar{\theta}) \sum y_{i} \bar{w} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence $C y=(\cos \theta / \cos \bar{\theta}) D y$. Letting $z=(\cos \theta / \cos \bar{\theta}) y$ gives the conclusion.
We note that $(\cos \theta / \cos \theta)>1$. This implies that if there is a vector $y \geq 0$ such that $C y=\bar{w}$, there is always a vector $z$ such that each nonzero coordinate of $z$ is strictly bigger than the one of $y$ satisfying $D z=\bar{w}$. By observing the proof of Lemma 3.2.1, we see that the following also holds:

$$
\text { If } z \geq 0 \text { satisfies } \bar{w}=D z \text {, then } y=\frac{\cos \theta}{\cos \bar{\theta}} z \text { satisfies } \bar{w}=C y \text {. }
$$

Example 3.2.2. Let the following be the given data:

$$
\theta=\pi / 6, \bar{\theta}=\pi / 4, \bar{w}=\left(\begin{array}{l}
0 \\
0 \\
1
\end{array}\right), w^{1}=\left(\begin{array}{l}
1 \\
0 \\
0
\end{array}\right), w^{2}=\left(\begin{array}{l}
0 \\
1 \\
0
\end{array}\right), w^{3}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
-1 \\
0 \\
0
\end{array}\right), w^{4}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
0 \\
-1 \\
0
\end{array}\right) .
$$

Define the vectors

$$
c^{i}:=\cos \theta \bar{w}+\sin \theta w^{i}, \quad \text { and } \quad d^{i}:=\cos \bar{\theta} \bar{w}+\sin \bar{\theta} w^{i}, \forall i=1, \ldots, 4 .
$$

Define two $3 \times 4$ matrices $C$ and $D$ as follows:

$$
C:=\left[\begin{array}{cccc}
1 / 2 & 0 & -1 / 2 & 0 \\
0 & 1 / 2 & 0 & -1 / 2 \\
\sqrt{3} / 2 & \sqrt{3} / 2 & \sqrt{3} / 2 & \sqrt{3} / 2
\end{array}\right], D:=\left[\begin{array}{cccc}
\sqrt{2} / 2 & 0 & -\sqrt{2} / 2 & 0 \\
0 & \sqrt{2} / 2 & 0 & -\sqrt{2} / 2 \\
\sqrt{2} / 2 & \sqrt{2} / 2 & \sqrt{2} / 2 & \sqrt{2} / 2
\end{array}\right]
$$

Then

$$
y^{1}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}\left(\begin{array}{l}
1 \\
0 \\
1 \\
0
\end{array}\right), y^{2}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}\left(\begin{array}{l}
0 \\
1 \\
0 \\
1
\end{array}\right), y^{3}=\frac{1}{2 \sqrt{3}}\left(\begin{array}{l}
1 \\
1 \\
1 \\
1
\end{array}\right)
$$

are solutions to $\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{4}: C y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\}$. Let

$$
z^{i}=\frac{\cos \theta}{\cos \bar{\theta}} y^{i}=\frac{\sqrt{3}}{\sqrt{2}} y^{i}, \quad i=1,2,3 .
$$

Then, by Lemma 3.2.1, each $z^{i}$ is a solution to $\left\{z \in \mathbb{R}^{4}: D z=\bar{w}, z \geq 0\right\}$. We note that the solutions to $\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{4}: C y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\}$ and $\left\{z \in \mathbb{R}^{4}: D z=\bar{w}, z \geq 0\right\}$ are not unique.

The rest of this section is not used later in this thesis. A reader may skip to Section 3.2.2. However we still present some interesting statements.

Remark 3.2.3. Let $\hat{\theta}=(\theta+\bar{\theta}) / 2$ and define

$$
\hat{c}_{i}:=\cos \hat{\theta} \bar{w}+\sin \hat{\theta}\left(-w^{i}\right),
$$

with vectors $\bar{w}$ and $w^{i}$ 's given in Hypothesis 3.1.1. Let $\hat{\mathcal{C}}=\left\{\hat{c}^{1}, \ldots, \hat{c}^{k}\right\}$ and let $\hat{C}=$ $\left[\begin{array}{lll}\hat{c}^{1} & \cdots & \hat{c}^{k}\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times k}$, and define

$$
\operatorname{cone}(\hat{\mathcal{C}})=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: x=\hat{C} z, z \geq 0\right\}
$$

Then, for all $x \in \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C})$ with $x=C y$ and $y \geq 0$, we have

$$
x=C y=D y+\hat{C} \gamma y,
$$

where $\gamma=-2 \sin \left(\frac{\theta-\bar{\theta}}{2}\right)$.
Proof. Suppose that $x \in \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C})$. Using the trigonometric relations

$$
\cos \alpha-\cos \beta=-2 \sin \left(\frac{\alpha-\beta}{2}\right) \sin \left(\frac{\alpha+\beta}{2}\right)
$$

and

$$
\sin \alpha-\sin \beta=2 \sin \left(\frac{\alpha-\beta}{2}\right) \cos \left(\frac{\alpha+\beta}{2}\right)
$$

we obtain the following relation:

$$
\begin{aligned}
x & =C y \\
& =\cos \bar{\theta} \sum y_{i} \bar{w}+\sin \bar{\theta} \sum y_{i} w^{i}+(\cos \theta-\cos \bar{\theta}) \sum y_{i} \bar{w}+(\sin \theta-\sin \bar{\theta}) \sum y_{i} w^{i} \\
& =D y+(\cos \theta-\cos \bar{\theta}) \sum y_{i} \bar{w}+(\sin \theta-\sin \bar{\theta}) \sum y_{i} w^{i} \\
& =D y+\left(-2 \sin \left(\frac{\theta-\bar{\theta}}{2}\right) \sin \left(\frac{\theta+\bar{\theta}}{2}\right)\right) \sum y_{i} \bar{w}+\left(2 \sin \left(\frac{\theta-\bar{\theta}}{2}\right) \cos \left(\frac{\theta+\bar{\theta}}{2}\right)\right) \sum y_{i} w^{i} \\
& =D y+\gamma \sin \hat{\theta} \sum y_{i} \bar{w}+\gamma \cos \hat{\theta} \sum y_{i}\left(-w^{i}\right) \\
& =D y+\sin \hat{\theta} \sum\left(\gamma y_{i}\right) \bar{w}+\cos \hat{\theta} \sum\left(\gamma y_{i}\right)\left(-w^{i}\right) \\
& =D y+\sum\left(\gamma y_{i}\right)\left(\sin \bar{\theta} \bar{w}+\cos \hat{\theta}\left(-w^{i}\right)\right) \\
& =D y+\sum\left(\gamma y_{i} \hat{c}^{i}\right. \\
& =D y+\hat{C} \gamma y,
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\gamma=-2 \sin \left(\frac{\theta-\bar{\theta}}{2}\right)>0$.
Remark 3.2.4. The following are false statements:

1. If $\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C}) \subset \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})$, then $\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{i}+\epsilon e\right\}_{i=1, \ldots, k}\right) \subset \operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{d^{i}+\epsilon e\right\}_{i=1, \ldots, k}\right)$.
2. $\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{i}+\epsilon e\right\}_{i=1, \ldots, k}\right)=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{1}, \ldots, c^{k}\right\}\right)+\operatorname{cone}(\{\epsilon e, \ldots, \epsilon e\})$.
3. For all $y \geq 0$, there exists $\xi \geq 0$ such that $C y=D(y+\xi)$ (This means that the relation stated in Lemma 3.2.1 holds when we have $\bar{w}=C y$.).

### 3.2.2 Relations between $\left\{y: P^{T} y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\}$ and $\left\{z: Q^{T} z=\bar{w}, z \geq 0\right\}$

We first note that using Lemma 2.1.32 and Algorithm 2.1.1, we can find vectors $p^{i}$ such that

$$
(\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C}))^{*}=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: C^{T} x \geq 0\right\}=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{p^{1}, \ldots, p^{m}\right\}\right)
$$

Thus we have

$$
\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C})=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: P x \geq 0\right\}
$$

where each $\left(p^{i}\right)^{T}$ is a row of matrix $P \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times n}$. Similarly, we can find vector $q^{i}$ 's such that

$$
(\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D}))^{*}=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: D^{T} x \geq 0\right\}=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{q^{1}, \ldots, q^{m^{\prime}}\right\}\right)
$$

Thus we have

$$
\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: Q x \geq 0\right\}
$$

where each $\left(q^{i}\right)^{T}$ is a row of matrix $Q \in \mathbb{R}^{m^{\prime} \times n}$ (We show later in Lemma 3.2.6 and Corollary 3.2.8 that $m^{\prime}=m$.).

In this section, we study a relation between $\left\{y: P^{T} y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\}$ and $\left\{z: Q^{T} z=\right.$ $\bar{w}, z \geq 0\}$. In Section 3.2.1, we have studied the relation between $\{y: C y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\}$
and $\{z: D z=\bar{w}, z \geq 0\}$. In the previous case, the columns of the data matrices $C$ and $D$ were explicitly given and hence obtaining the relation between two sets was easy. However, we do not know how the data matrices $P$ and $Q$ look like as each row of $P$ and $Q$ is obtained by computing the null spaces of certain matrices (See Algorithm 2.1.1.). In this section, we show that there is a similar relation, stated in Lemma 3.2.1, between the sets $\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{m}: P^{T} y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\}$ and $\left\{z \in \mathbb{R}^{m}: Q^{T} z=\bar{w}, z \geq 0\right\}$. We first need a few lemmas in order to show the relation.

We recall that $\bar{w} \in \operatorname{int}(\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C}))$ by Lemma 3.1.9. The following lemma shows that $\bar{w}$ is also in the interior of $(\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C}))^{*}$.
Lemma 3.2.5. Given $\bar{w} \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$ and $\left\{p^{1}, \ldots, p^{m}\right\} \subset \mathbb{R}^{n}$ as above, we have

$$
\bar{w} \in \operatorname{int}\left(\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{p^{1}, \ldots, p^{m}\right\}\right)\right) .
$$

Proof. Note that cone $\left(\left\{p^{1}, \ldots, p^{m}\right\}\right)=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: C^{T} x \geq 0\right\}$. Since $C=\left[\begin{array}{lll}c^{1} & \cdots & c^{k}\end{array}\right]$ and $\left\langle c^{i}, \bar{w}\right\rangle>0, \forall i$, we have $C^{T} \bar{w}>0$. Hence $\bar{w} \in \operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{p^{1}, \ldots, p^{m}\right\}\right)$. In particular, $\bar{w} \in \operatorname{int}\left(\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{p^{1}, \ldots, p^{m}\right\}\right)\right)$ due to the strict inequalities.
Lemma 3.2.6. Let $p$ be an extremal vector of cone $(\mathcal{C})^{*}$. Define the submatrix

$$
C_{0}:=C(:, \mathcal{I}) \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times(n-1)} \text { of } C \text { satisfying } C_{0}^{T} p=0, \text { where }|\mathcal{I}|=n-1
$$

Then a vector $q$ satisfying $D_{0}^{T} q=0$, where $D_{0}:=D(:, \mathcal{I})$ is an extremal vector of cone $(\mathcal{D})^{*}$.
We present an example before proving Lemma 3.2.6.
Example 3.2.7. Let

$$
\bar{w}=\left(\begin{array}{l}
0 \\
0 \\
1
\end{array}\right), w^{1}=\left(\begin{array}{l}
1 \\
0 \\
0
\end{array}\right), w^{2}=\left(\begin{array}{l}
0 \\
1 \\
0
\end{array}\right), w^{3}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
-1 \\
0 \\
0
\end{array}\right), \text { and } w^{4}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
0 \\
-1 \\
0
\end{array}\right)
$$

Given $\theta=\pi / 6$ and $\bar{\theta}=\pi / 4$, define

$$
c^{i}=\cos \theta \bar{w}+\sin \theta w^{i}, \quad \text { and } d^{i}=\cos \bar{\theta} \bar{w}+\sin \bar{\theta} w^{i}, \forall i=1, \ldots, 4
$$

Let $p=(1 / 2,0, \sqrt{3} / 2)^{T}$ be an extremal vector of the dual cone $\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{3}: C^{T} x \geq 0\right\}$. We note that $p \in \operatorname{null}\left(\left[c^{1}, c^{2}\right]^{T}\right)$. Let $q$ be a vector satisfying $q \in \operatorname{null}\left(\left[d^{1}, d^{2}\right]^{T}\right)$. Then $q=\frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}(1,1,1)^{T}$. We do not need to check $\left[d^{1}, d^{2}\right]^{T}$ determines an extremal vector of $(\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D}))^{*}$, because the statement of Lemma 3.2.6 guarantees that $q$ is an extremal vector of $(\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D}))^{*}$.

Now we prove Lemma 3.2.6.
Proof. We first show that

$$
\operatorname{dim}\left(\operatorname{null}\left(D_{0}^{T}\right)\right)=1
$$

Without loss of generality, we may assume that $\mathcal{I}=\{1, \ldots, n-1\}$. Since $\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}}$ are linearly independent, $\left\{d^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}}$ are linearly independent. Hence $D_{0} \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times(n-1)}$ has rank $n-1$ and the dimension of null $\left(D_{0}^{T}\right)$ is 1 . Thus there is only one vector satisfying $D_{0}^{T} q=0$, up to scalar multiple. We choose $\|q\|=1$ such that $\langle\bar{w}, q\rangle \geq 0$.

We define two hyperplanes:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& h_{C}=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}:\langle p, x\rangle=0, C_{0}^{T} p=0\right\}, \\
& h_{D}=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}:\langle q, x\rangle=0, D_{0}^{T} q=0\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now we show that $D_{1}^{T} q>0$, where $D_{1}:=D(:,[k] \backslash \mathcal{I})$. Suppose to the contrary that there exists $j \in\{1, \ldots, k\} \backslash \mathcal{I}$ such that $\left\langle d^{j}, q\right\rangle<0$.

Let

$$
T=\left\{\cos (\mu) \bar{w}+\sin (\mu) w^{j}: \mu \in[0, \bar{\theta}]\right\}
$$

be the trajectory from $\bar{w}$ to $d^{j}$ and define $T(\mu):=\cos \mu \bar{w}+\sin \mu w^{j}$. We show that $T$ goes through the interior of cone $\left(\{d\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}}\right)$ once. Let

$$
l=\left\{\lambda \bar{w}+(1-\lambda) d^{j}: \lambda \in[0,1]\right\}
$$

be the line segment between $\bar{w}$ and $d^{j}$ and define $l(\lambda):=\lambda \bar{w}+(1-\lambda) d^{j}$ (See Figure 3.2.1.).


Figure 3.2.1: $l$ is the line segment between $\bar{w}$ and $d^{j}$ and $T$ is the trajectory from $\bar{w}$ to $d^{j}$.

Since $\left\langle q, d^{j}\right\rangle<0$ and $\langle q, \bar{w}\rangle \geq 0$, the hyperplane $h_{D}$ separates $d^{j}$ from $\bar{w}$. Hence $l$ intersects $h_{D}$ once. We show that $l$ intersects cone $\left(\left\{d^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}}\right) \subset h_{D}$, in particular.

Let $l(\bar{\lambda})$ be the intersection of $l$ and $h_{D}$. Suppose that the line segment $l$ does not intersect cone $\left(\left\{d^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}}\right)$, i.e., $l(\bar{\lambda}) \notin \operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{d^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}}\right)$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{d^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}}\right) \subsetneq \operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{d^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}} \cup l(\bar{\lambda})\right) \subset h_{D} \tag{3.2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

We note that cone $\left(\left\{d^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}} \cup l(\bar{\lambda})\right)$ is a pointed cone, since cone $\left(\left\{d^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}} \cup l(\bar{\lambda})\right) \subset \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})$ and cone $(\mathcal{D})$ is a pointed cone by Theorem 3.1.8.

Since (3.2.1) holds, there exists $\ell \in \mathcal{I}$ such that

$$
d^{\ell}=\sum_{i \in \mathcal{I} \backslash \ell}^{n-1} z_{i} d^{i}+z_{j} l(\bar{\lambda})=\sum_{i \in \mathcal{I} \backslash \ell}^{n-1} z_{i} d^{i}+z_{j}(1-\bar{\lambda}) d^{j}+z_{j} \bar{\lambda} \bar{w}
$$

with $z_{i} \geq 0, \forall i \in \mathcal{I} \backslash \ell$ and $z_{j} \geq 0$ (See Figure 3.2.2.). We note that all the coefficients


Figure 3.2.2: An illustration of a 2-dimensional subspace in $\mathbb{R}^{3}$. $d^{2}$ is in cone $\left(\left\{d^{1}, l(\bar{\lambda})\right\}\right)$.
$z_{i}, z_{j}(1-\bar{\lambda})$ and $z_{j} \bar{\lambda}$ are nonnegative. This implies that $d^{\ell}$ is a conic combination of $\left\{d^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I} \backslash l} \cup\left\{d^{j}\right\} \cup\{\bar{w}\}$ and hence this contradicts $d^{\ell}$ being an extremal vector of cone $(\mathcal{D})$. Therefore, $l$ must intersect cone $\left(\left\{d^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}}\right)$.

Since cone $\left(\{\bar{w}\} \cup\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}}\right) \subsetneq \operatorname{cone}\left(\{\bar{w}\} \cup\left\{d^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}}\right), l$ also intersects cone $\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}}\right)$ and hence $T$ intersects cone $\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}}\right)$.

Each element $x$ in cone $\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}} \cup\{\bar{w}\}\right)$ satisfies $\arccos \left(\frac{\langle x, \bar{w}\rangle}{\|x\|\|\bar{w}\|}\right) \leq \theta$ by Lemma 3.1.5. In particular, $\arccos \left(\frac{\langle x, \bar{w}\rangle}{\|x\|\|\bar{w}\|}\right)<\theta$, if $x \neq c^{i}, \forall i \in \mathcal{I}$. Since $\left\langle c^{j}, \bar{w}\right\rangle=\cos \theta$ and $c^{j} \neq c^{i}, \forall i \in \mathcal{I}$, we have $c^{j} \notin \operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}} \cup\{\bar{w}\}\right)$.

Since $\langle p, T(0)\rangle=\langle p, \bar{w}\rangle \geq 0$, the trajectory $T$ starts from $\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}:\langle p, x\rangle \geq 0\right\}$. Since $T$ intersects cone $\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}}\right) \subset h_{C}$ and

$$
\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}} \cup\{\bar{w}\}\right) \subset\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}:\langle p, x\rangle \geq 0\right\}
$$

the hyperplane $h_{C}$ must separate $c^{j}$ from $\bar{w}$. Hence, we have $\left\langle c^{j}, p\right\rangle<0$ and this contradicts the hypothesis $C_{1}^{T} p>0$. Thus we have $D_{1}^{T} q>0$.

Corollary 3.2.8. Let $q$ be an extremal vector of cone( $\mathcal{D})^{*}$. Define the submatrix $D_{0} \in$ $\mathbb{R}^{n \times(n-1)}$ of $D$ satisfying $D_{0}^{T} p=0$, where $|\mathcal{I}|=n-1$. Then a vector $p$ satisfying $C_{0}^{T} q=0$, where $C_{0}:=C(:, \mathcal{I})$ is an extremal vector of cone $(\mathcal{C})^{*}$.

The consequence of Lemma 3.2.6 and Corollary 3.2.8 is that the matrices $P$ and $Q$ have the same size. In other words, $\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: P x \geq 0\right\}$ and $\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: Q x \geq 0\right\}$ have the same number of inequalities. We also note that if $\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C})$ is a nondegenerate cone, then $n=m=k$ by Proposition 3.1.14.

Throughout the thesis, if the $i$-th row $\left(p^{i}\right)^{T}$ of $P$ is determined by null $\left(C_{0}^{T}\right)$, then we place the vector determined by null $\left(D_{0}^{T}\right)$ to the $i$-th row of $Q$.

Lemma 3.2.9. Let $p^{T}$ and $q^{T}$ be $i$-th row of matrices $P$ and $Q$, respectively. Let $C_{\mathcal{I}}$ be the maximal submatrix of $C$ such that $C_{\mathcal{I}}^{T} p=0$ and let $D_{\mathcal{I}}$ be the maximal submatrix of $D$ such that $D_{\mathcal{I}}^{T} q=0$, for some $\mathcal{I}$. Then, $\operatorname{rank}([\bar{w}, p, q])=2$. In particular, $q \in \operatorname{cone}(\{\bar{w}, p\})$.

Proof. We define

$$
\alpha:=\cos \theta, \beta:=\sin \theta, \bar{\alpha}:=\cos \bar{\theta}, \text { and } \bar{\beta}:=\sin \bar{\theta} .
$$

Then we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
c^{i} & =\cos \theta \bar{w}+\sin \theta w^{i}=\alpha \bar{w}+\beta w^{i}, \\
d^{i} & =\cos \bar{\theta} \bar{w}+\sin \bar{\theta} w^{i}=\bar{\alpha} \bar{w}+\bar{\beta} w^{i} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $p$ is an extremal vector of $\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: C^{T} x \geq 0\right\}$, exactly $n-1$ halfspaces are active at $p$ among $\left\langle c^{i}, x\right\rangle \geq 0, \forall i \in\{1, \ldots, k\}$. If also follows that $|\mathcal{I}|=n-1$. Then

$$
C_{\mathcal{I}}=\alpha W+\beta \bar{W} \text { and } D_{\mathcal{I}}=\bar{\alpha} W+\bar{\beta} \bar{W}
$$

where $W=\left[\begin{array}{lll}\bar{w} & \cdots & \bar{w}\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times(n-1)}$ and $\bar{W}=\left[\begin{array}{lll}w^{1} & \cdots & w^{n-1}\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times(n-1)}$ (We may assume that the first $n-1$ vectors of $\left\{w^{1}, \ldots, w^{k}\right\}$ form the matrix $\bar{W}$ for simplicity.).

Since

$$
\bar{w} \in \operatorname{int}(\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C}))=\operatorname{int}\left(\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: P x \geq 0\right\}\right)
$$

we get $\langle p, \bar{w}\rangle>0$. Let $z$ be an orthonormal vector to $\bar{w}$, lying in $\operatorname{span}(\{p, \bar{w}\})$ and satisfying $\langle p, z\rangle>0$ (See Figure 3.2.3.). Then, we can write


Figure 3.2.3: $z$ satisfies $\langle z, \bar{w}\rangle=0, z \in \operatorname{span}(\{p, \bar{w}\})$ and $\langle p, z\rangle>0$.

$$
p=\cos \sigma \bar{w}+\sin \sigma z, \text { for some } \sigma \in(0, \pi / 2) .
$$

Define

$$
q^{\prime}:=\cos \sigma^{\prime} \bar{w}+\sin \sigma^{\prime} z, \text { for some } \sigma^{\prime} \in(0, \pi / 2)
$$

We want to show that $q=q^{\prime}$. We note that

$$
\begin{align*}
0=C_{\mathcal{I}}^{T} p & =\left(\alpha W^{T}+\beta \bar{W}^{T}\right) p \\
& =\alpha W^{T} p+\beta \bar{W}^{T} p \\
& =\alpha W^{T}(\cos \sigma \bar{w}+\sin \sigma z)+\beta \bar{W}^{T}(\cos \sigma \bar{w}+\sin \sigma z)  \tag{3.2.2}\\
& =\alpha \cos \sigma W^{T} \bar{w}+\alpha \sin \sigma W^{T} z+\beta \cos \sigma \bar{W}^{T} \bar{w}+\beta \sin \sigma \bar{W}^{T} z
\end{align*}
$$

Since $W^{T} \bar{w}=e$ and $W^{T} z=\bar{W}^{T} \bar{w}=0$, it follows that

$$
0=\alpha \cos \sigma e+\beta \sin \sigma \bar{W}^{T} z
$$

Thus we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
e=-\frac{\beta \sin \sigma}{\alpha \cos \sigma} \bar{W}^{T} z \tag{3.2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Similar expansion of $D_{\mathcal{I}}^{T} q^{\prime}$ used in (3.2.2) gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
D_{\mathcal{I}}^{T} q^{\prime}=D_{\mathcal{I}}^{T}\left(\cos \sigma^{\prime} \bar{w}+\sin \sigma^{\prime} z\right)=\bar{\alpha} \cos \sigma^{\prime} e+\bar{\beta} \sin \sigma^{\prime} \bar{W}^{T} z \tag{3.2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Plugging (3.2.3) into (3.2.4) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
D_{\mathcal{I}}^{T} q^{\prime}=\left[-\bar{\alpha} \cos \sigma^{\prime} \frac{\beta \sin \sigma}{\alpha \cos \sigma}+\bar{\beta} \sin \sigma^{\prime}\right] \bar{W}^{T} z \tag{3.2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

We make an observation on the coefficient of the RHS in (3.2.5):

$$
\begin{aligned}
-\bar{\alpha} \cos \sigma^{\prime} \frac{\beta \sin \sigma}{\alpha \cos \sigma}+\bar{\beta} \sin \sigma^{\prime} & =-\cos \bar{\theta} \cos \sigma^{\prime} \frac{\sin \theta \sin \sigma}{\cos \theta \cos \sigma}+\sin \bar{\theta} \sin \sigma^{\prime} \\
& =\sin \bar{\theta} \sin \sigma^{\prime}\left(-\frac{\cos \bar{\theta} \overline{\cos \sigma^{\prime}}}{\sin \bar{\theta}} \frac{\sin \theta \sin \sigma^{\prime}}{\cos \theta} \frac{\sin \sigma}{\cos \sigma}+1\right) \\
& =\sin \bar{\theta} \sin \sigma^{\prime}\left(-\frac{\tan \theta \tan \sigma}{\tan \bar{\theta} \tan \sigma^{\prime}}+1\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Since the range of the tangent function is $(-\infty, \infty)$, there exists $\sigma^{\prime} \in(-\pi / 2, \pi / 2)$ such that

$$
\tan \sigma^{\prime}=(\tan \sigma \tan \theta) / \tan \bar{\theta}
$$

Since $\tan \sigma, \tan \theta, \tan \bar{\theta}>0$, we must have $\tan \sigma^{\prime}>0$. Thus $\sigma^{\prime} \in(0, \pi / 2)$. We may take such $\sigma^{\prime}$ and we have $D_{\mathcal{I}}^{T} q^{\prime}=0$ and $\left\|q^{\prime}\right\|=1$.

Since $\operatorname{rank}\left(D_{\mathcal{I}}^{T}\right)=n-1$, there exists only one vector $x$ that satisfies $D_{\mathcal{I}}^{T} x=0$ up to scalar multiple. If there are two vectors $x^{1}, x^{2}$ such that $\left\|x^{1}\right\|=\left\|x^{2}\right\|=1$ and $D_{\mathcal{I}}^{T} x^{1}=$ $D_{\mathcal{I}}^{T} x^{2}=0, x^{1}$ and $x^{2}$ can hold only one of the following two cases: $x^{1}=-x^{2}$ or $x^{1}=x^{2}$.

We note that

$$
\left\langle\bar{w}, q^{\prime}\right\rangle=\cos \sigma^{\prime}\langle\bar{w}, \bar{w}\rangle+\sin \sigma^{\prime}\langle\bar{w}, z\rangle=\cos \sigma^{\prime}>0
$$

and

$$
\bar{w} \in \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: Q x \geq 0\right\} \Longrightarrow\langle\bar{w}, q\rangle \geq 0
$$

Therefore, $q$ and $q^{\prime}$ cannot have different signs and so we have

$$
q=q^{\prime}=\cos \sigma^{\prime} \bar{w}+\sin \sigma^{\prime} z
$$

Thus $\operatorname{rank}([\bar{w}, p, q])=2$. Since polarization is order-reversing (See Lemma 2.1.25.), we have

$$
\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C}) \subset \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D}) \Longrightarrow \operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{p^{i}\right\}_{i \in\{1, \ldots, m\}}\right) \supset \operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{q^{i}\right\}_{i \in\{1, \ldots, m\}}\right)
$$

Therefore, $q \in \operatorname{cone}(\{\bar{w}, p\})$.
We can represent Lemma 3.2.9 pictorially (See Figure 3.2.4.). For each 2-dimensioanl subspace of $\mathbb{R}^{n}$, $\hat{w}^{i}$ plays the role of $z$ in the proof of Lemma 3.2.9. We pay attention to the subscript $i$ of $\theta_{i}$. We may have different $\theta_{i}$ 's for each two-dimensional subspace (Note that in Figure 3.1.4, same $\theta$ is used in each two-dimensional subspace in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$.).


Figure 3.2.4: $p^{i}$ is rotated further from $\bar{w}$ than $q^{i}$.

Now we are ready to show the special property we mentioned at the beginning of this section.

Lemma 3.2.10. For all $y \in\left\{y: P^{T} y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\}$, there exists $z \in\left\{z: Q^{T} z=\bar{w}, z \geq 0\right\}$ such that $y \geq z$.

Proof. By Lemma 3.2.9, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& q^{i}=\cos \theta_{i} \bar{w}+\sin \theta_{i} \hat{w}^{i}, \quad \text { and } \\
& p^{i}=\cos \theta_{i}^{\prime} \bar{w}+\sin \theta_{i}^{\prime} \hat{w}^{i},
\end{aligned}
$$

where each $\hat{w}^{i}$ is an orthonormal vector to $\bar{w}$ and lying in $\operatorname{span}\left(\left\{\bar{w}, p^{i}\right\}\right)$.

Suppose that $\bar{w}=P^{T} y$. Then,

$$
\bar{w}=P^{T} y=\sum y_{i} \cos \theta_{i}^{\prime} \bar{w}+\sum y_{i} \sin \theta_{i}^{\prime} \hat{w}^{i} .
$$

Then, for some $\eta \in \mathbb{R}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\eta \bar{w}=\sum y_{i} \sin \theta_{i}^{\prime} \hat{w}^{i} . \tag{3.2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\hat{w}_{i} \in \bar{w}^{\perp}, \forall i=1, \ldots, m$, the equality (3.2.6) holds only when $\eta=0$ and hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum y_{i} \sin \theta_{i}^{\prime} \hat{w}^{i}=0 \tag{3.2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

We note that

$$
Q^{T} y=\sum y_{i} \cos \theta_{i} \bar{w}+\sum y_{i} \sin \theta_{i} \hat{w}^{i}
$$

Then, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
P^{T} y & =\sum y_{i} \cos \theta_{i}^{\prime} \bar{w}+\sum y_{i} \sin \theta_{i}^{\prime} \hat{w}^{i} \\
& =\sum y_{i} \cos \theta_{i}^{\prime} \bar{w}+\sum y_{i} \sin \theta_{i}^{\prime} \hat{w}^{i}+\sum y_{i}\left(\cos \theta_{i}-\cos \theta_{i}\right) \bar{w}+\sum y_{i}\left(\sin \theta_{i}-\sin \theta_{i}\right) \hat{w}^{i} \\
& =\sum y_{i} \cos \theta_{i} \bar{w}+\sum y_{i} \sin \theta_{i} \hat{w}^{i}+\sum y_{i}\left(\cos \theta_{i}^{\prime}-\cos \theta_{i}\right) \bar{w}+\sum y_{i}\left(\sin \theta_{i}^{\prime}-\sin \theta_{i}\right) \hat{w}^{i} \\
& =Q^{T} y+\sum y_{i}\left(\cos \theta_{i}^{\prime}-\cos \theta_{i}\right) \bar{w}+\sum y_{i}\left(\sin \theta_{i}^{\prime}-\sin \theta_{i}\right) \hat{w}^{i} \\
& =Q^{T} y+\sum y_{i}\left(\cos \theta_{i}^{\prime}-\cos \theta_{i}\right) \bar{w}-\sum y_{i} \sin \theta_{i} \hat{w}^{i} . \tag{3.2.8}
\end{align*}
$$

The last equality holds by (3.2.7).
Let $y_{i}^{\prime}=\frac{\cos \theta_{i}^{\prime}}{\cos \theta_{i}} y_{i}, \forall i=1, \ldots, m$. We note that $\frac{\cos \theta_{i}^{\prime}}{\cos \theta_{i}}<1$. Then, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
Q^{T} y^{\prime}= & \sum y_{i}^{\prime} q^{i} \\
= & \sum \frac{\cos \theta_{i}^{\prime}}{\cos \theta_{i}} y_{i} q^{i} \\
= & \sum \frac{\cos \theta_{i}^{\prime}}{\cos \theta_{i}} y_{i} q^{i}+\sum y_{i}\left(\cos \theta_{i}-\cos \theta_{i}\right) \bar{w}+\sum y_{i}\left(\sin \theta_{i}-\sin \theta_{i}\right) \hat{w}^{i}  \tag{3.2.9}\\
= & \sum y_{i} \cos \theta_{i} \bar{w}+\sum y_{i} \sin \theta_{i} \hat{w}^{i}+\sum \frac{\cos \theta_{i}^{\prime}}{\cos \theta_{i}} \cos \theta_{i} y_{i} \bar{w}+\sum \frac{\cos \theta_{i}^{\prime}}{\cos \theta_{i}} \sin \theta_{i} y_{i} \hat{w}^{i} \\
& -\sum y_{i} \cos \theta_{i} \bar{w}-\sum y_{i} \sin \theta_{i} \hat{w}^{i} \\
= & Q^{T} y+\sum y_{i}\left(\cos \theta_{i}^{\prime}-\cos \theta_{i}\right) \bar{w}+\sum y_{i}\left(\frac{\cos \theta_{i}^{\prime} \sin \theta_{i}}{\cos \theta_{i}}-\sin \theta_{i}\right) \hat{w}^{i} .
\end{align*}
$$

We focus on the last term of (3.2.9). If we show

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum y_{i} \frac{\cos \theta_{i}^{\prime} \sin \theta_{i}}{\cos \theta_{i}} \hat{w}^{i}=0 \tag{3.2.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

then the last line of (3.2.8) and the last line of (3.2.9) are the same, and hence we have $P^{T} y=Q^{T} y^{\prime}$. Thus, if we show (3.2.10), we are done.

Let $p^{j}$ be an extremal vector formed by $\left\{\left(c^{i}\right)^{T}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}}$, for some $\mathcal{I} \subset\{1, \ldots, k\}$ and $|\mathcal{I}|=$
$n-1$. Then, $\forall i \in \mathcal{I}$, we have $\left\langle p^{j}, c^{i}\right\rangle=0$, since $p^{j}$ is in the orthogonal complement of $\operatorname{span}\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}}\right)$. Hence, for $i \in \mathcal{I}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
0 & =\left\langle p^{j}, c^{i}\right\rangle \\
& =\left\langle\cos \theta_{j}^{\prime} \bar{w}+\sin \theta_{j}^{\prime} \hat{w}^{j}, \cos \theta \bar{w}+\sin \theta w^{i}\right\rangle \\
& =\cos \theta_{j}^{\prime} \cos \theta \bar{w}^{T} \bar{w}+\cos \theta_{j}^{\prime} \sin \theta \bar{w}^{T} w^{i}+\sin \theta_{j}^{\prime} \cos \theta \bar{w}^{T} \hat{w}^{j}+\sin \theta_{j}^{\prime} \sin \theta\left(\hat{w}^{j}\right)^{T} w^{i} \\
& =\cos \theta_{j}^{\prime} \cos \theta \bar{w}^{T} \bar{w}+\sin \theta_{j}^{\prime} \sin \theta\left(\hat{w}^{j}\right)^{T} w^{i} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\cos \theta_{j}^{\prime} \cos \theta=-\sin \theta_{j}^{\prime} \sin \theta\left(w^{i}\right)^{T} \hat{w}^{j} \Longrightarrow\left(w^{i}\right)^{T} \hat{w}^{j}=-\frac{\cos \theta_{j}^{\prime} \cos \theta}{\sin \theta_{j}^{\prime} \sin \theta}=-\frac{1}{\tan \theta_{j}^{\prime} \tan \theta} . \tag{3.2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Similarly, let $q^{j}$ be an extremal vector formed by $\left\{\left(d^{i}\right)^{T}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}}$. Then, $\forall i \in \mathcal{I}$, we have $\left\langle q^{j}, d^{i}\right\rangle=0$, since $q^{j}$ is in the orthogonal complement of $\operatorname{span}\left(\left\{d^{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}}\right)$. Thus, for $i \in \mathcal{I}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
0 & =\left\langle q^{j}, d^{i}\right\rangle \\
& =\left\langle\cos \theta_{j} \bar{w}+\sin \theta_{j} \hat{w}^{j}, \cos \bar{\theta} \bar{w}+\sin \bar{\theta} w^{i}\right\rangle \\
& =\cos \theta_{j} \cos \bar{\theta} \bar{w}^{T} \bar{w}+\cos \theta_{j} \sin \bar{\theta} \bar{w}^{T} w^{i}+\sin \theta_{j} \cos \bar{\theta} \bar{w}^{T} \hat{w}^{j}+\sin \theta_{j} \sin \bar{\theta}\left(\hat{w}^{j}\right)^{T} w^{i} \\
& =\cos \theta_{j} \cos \bar{\theta} \bar{w}^{T} \bar{w}+\sin \theta_{j} \sin \bar{\theta}\left(\hat{w}^{j}\right)^{T} w^{i} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\cos \theta_{j} \cos \bar{\theta}=-\sin \theta_{j} \sin \bar{\theta}\left(w^{i}\right)^{T} \hat{w}^{j} \Longrightarrow\left(w^{i}\right)^{T} \hat{w}^{j}=-\frac{\cos \theta_{j} \cos \bar{\theta}}{\sin \theta_{j} \sin \bar{\theta}}=-\frac{1}{\tan \theta_{j} \tan \bar{\theta}} . \tag{3.2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, (3.2.11) and (3.2.12) imply that

$$
\frac{1}{\tan \theta_{j}^{\prime} \tan \theta}=\frac{1}{\tan \theta_{j} \tan \bar{\theta}} \Longleftrightarrow \frac{\tan \bar{\theta}}{\tan \theta}=\frac{\tan \theta_{j}^{\prime}}{\tan \theta_{j}}, \quad \forall j \in\{1, \ldots, m\} .
$$

We note that $\tan \theta_{j} / \tan \theta_{j}^{\prime}$ is the same constant, $\forall j \in\{1, \ldots, m\}$. Let $\gamma:=\tan \theta / \tan \bar{\theta}$ be the constant.

We observe the following:

$$
\begin{align*}
\sum y_{i}\left(\frac{\cos \theta_{i}^{\prime} \sin \theta_{i}}{\cos \theta_{i}}\right) \hat{w}^{i} & =\sum y_{i}\left(\frac{\cos \theta_{i}^{\prime} \sin \theta_{i}}{\sin \theta_{i}^{\prime} \cos \theta_{i}}\right) \sin \theta_{i}^{\prime} \hat{w}^{i} \\
& =\sum y_{i} \frac{\tan \theta_{i}}{\tan \theta_{i}^{\prime}} \sin \theta_{i}^{\prime} \hat{w}^{i}  \tag{3.2.13}\\
& =\gamma \sum y_{i} \sin \theta_{i}^{\prime} \hat{w}^{i} \\
& =0 .
\end{align*}
$$

The last equality of (3.2.13) holds by (3.2.7). Therefore, (3.2.13) verifies (3.2.10), and we are done.

By observing the proof of Lemma 3.2.10, we see that the following also holds:
If $z \geq 0$ satisfies $Q^{T} z=\bar{w}$, then there exists $y$ satisfying $P^{T} y=\bar{w}$ and $y \geq z$.
We note that Lemma 3.2.10 looks similar to Lemma 3.2.1. Lemma 3.2.1 tells us that

$$
\bar{w}=C y, \text { for some } y \geq 0 \Longrightarrow \exists z=\frac{\cos \bar{\theta}}{\cos \theta} y \text { such that } \bar{w}=D z
$$

In other words, Lemma 3.2.1 tells us that given $y \geq 0$ satisfying $\bar{w}=C y$, there is $z \geq 0$ with $\bar{w}=D z$ and all nonzero coordinates of $z$ are proportionally bigger than the nonzero coordinates of $y$. However, Lemma 3.2.10 tells us slightly different property. It tells us that given $\bar{y} \geq 0$ satisfying $P^{T} \bar{y}=\bar{w}$, there is a $\bar{z} \geq 0$ with $Q^{T} \bar{z}=\bar{w}$ and all nonzero coordinates of $\bar{z}$ are just bigger than the nonzero coordinates of $\bar{y}$. Hence given such $\bar{y}$, we cannot clearly specify each coordinate of $\bar{z}$, unless we perform further computations.

## Chapter 4

## Sensitivity of Optimal Value Function

In this chapter, we present the main results for this thesis. Specifically, we perform postoptimal analysis to show that the different sizes of the cones (or, feasible regions) affect robustness of the optimal value. The sensitivity analysis in this thesis has some different aspects from the classical sensitivity analysis of linear programming. While the classical sensitivity analysis focuses on obtaining allowable perturbation ranges, this thesis focuses on the change of the optimal value under the assumption that some reasonable bounds for the perturbations are given. We also view the problem geometrically, i.e., we relate the dual optimal solutions to the geometrical structures constructed in Chapter 3. We can perform the postoptimal analysis relatively easier, because of our knowledge of the primal-dual optimal solutions for our models. This is shown in Sections 4.1 and 4.2 below.

This chapter is organized as follows: in Section 4.1, we define two families of LPs, $\mathbf{L P}(\mathcal{P})$ and $\mathbf{L P}(\mathcal{Q})$, in order to study their sensitivities. In Section 4.2, we study the optimal solutions to instances $(\mathcal{P})$ and $(\mathcal{Q})$ in the two families, as well as their dual optimal solutions. In Section 4.3, we study some properties of the optimal value functions of ( $\mathcal{P}$ ) and $(\mathcal{Q})$. We then consider the LPs divided into two classes: nondegenerate (Section 4.4) and degenerate (Section 4.5). In Section 4.4, we study the strict monotonicity and the sensitivity of the optimal value function, when the given $\mathbf{L P}$ is nondegenerate. In Section 4.5, we study the sensitivity of the optimal value function via directional differentiability, when the given LP is degenerate. We also further study a sufficient condition for local differentiability of the optimal value functions of $(\mathcal{P})$ and $(\mathcal{Q})$.

### 4.1 LP Models

With the data from Section 3.1, we consider a vector $\bar{w}$ for the objective function and two classes of cones using the set and matrix $\mathcal{C}, C$, respectively. (See Figure 4.1.1.)

1. cone $(\mathcal{C})=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: P x \geq 0\right\}$,
2. cone $(\mathcal{C})^{\circ}=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: C^{T} x \leq 0\right\}$, i.e., the negative polar of cone $(\mathcal{C})$.


Figure 4.1.1: An illustration of cone $(\mathcal{C})$ and its negative polar cone in $\mathbb{R}^{2}$.

Using these two cones, we define two LPs with nonnegativity constraints on the variables:

1. $\min \{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle: P x \geq 0, x \geq 0\}$,
2. $\min \left\{\langle-\bar{w}, x\rangle: C^{T} x \leq 0, x \geq 0\right\}$.

In the presence of data uncertainty, we wish to form the robust counterparts of the above LPs. Before forming their robust counterparts, we consider a general form of an LP.

Given

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{L P} \quad \min \{\langle c, x\rangle: A x \geq b, x \geq 0\} \tag{4.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $A \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times n}$, suppose that each entry of the data matrix $A$ is uncertain and each uncertain entry is known to have perturbation range $[-\epsilon, \epsilon]$, with $\epsilon>0$. It is shown in (2.4.9) that the robust counterpart of each constraint $a_{i}^{T} x \geq b_{i}$ of (4.1.1) is

$$
a_{i}^{T} x-\epsilon e^{T} x \geq b_{i}
$$

Hence, the robust counterpart of (4.1.1) is

$$
\min \{\langle c, x\rangle: A x-\epsilon E x \geq b, x \geq 0\}
$$

where we recall that $E=e^{m}\left(e^{n}\right)^{T}$ is the matrix of ones.
If $b$ above is the zero vector, then the constraint system $A x \geq b$ of (4.1.1) forms a homogeneous system. If we further assume that 0 is the unique optimal solution to (4.1.1), and we consider the robust counterpart of the homogeneous system $A x \geq 0$, i.e.,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\min \{\langle c, x\rangle: A x-\epsilon E x \geq 0, x \geq 0\} \tag{4.1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

then the uncertainty does not do anything to the problem as 0 remains the optimal solution to (4.1.2). Hence, having $b=0$ trivializes the problem even after perturbations. This motivates us to translate the cones away from the origin.

In our problems, we translate the two cones cone $(\mathcal{C})$ and $(\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C}))^{\circ}$ by $e$ to obtain a cone with vertex at $e$, (see Definition 2.1.12) and optimal solution at $e$. We thus have a nonzero RHS in our constraint systems (See Figure 4.1.2.):

$$
\begin{equation*}
A(x-e) \geq 0 \Longleftrightarrow A x \geq A e \tag{4.1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$



Figure 4.1.2: An illustration in $\mathbb{R}^{2}$ : The shaded region is the feasible region of the original cone.

Hence with (4.1.3), its robust counterpart becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
\min \{\langle c, x\rangle: A x-\epsilon E x \geq A e, x \geq 0\} \tag{4.1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now we are ready to define the $\mathbf{L P s}$ for sensitivity analysis. We define an $\mathbf{L P}$

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
(\mathcal{P}) \quad \text { subject to } & P x \geq P e \\
& x \geq 0 .
\end{array}
$$

Suppose that the data matrix $P$ on the LHS of the constraints $P x \geq P e$ of $(\mathcal{P})$ is uncertain, and each uncertain entry of $P$ is known to take perturbations in the range $[-\epsilon, \epsilon]$, with $\epsilon>0$. Then the robust counterpart of $(\mathcal{P})$ is

$$
\begin{array}{ll} 
& \min \\
(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon)) \quad & \langle\bar{w}, x\rangle  \tag{4.1.5}\\
\text { subject to } & P x-\epsilon E x \geq P e \\
& x \geq 0
\end{array}
$$

Similarly, we define an $\mathbf{L P}$

$$
\begin{array}{cl}
\min & \langle-\bar{w}, x\rangle \\
\text { subject to } & C^{T} x \leq C^{T} e \\
& x \geq 0
\end{array}
$$

Suppose that the data matrix $C^{T}$ on the LHS of the constraints $C^{T} x \leq C^{T} e$ is uncertain,
and each entry of $C^{T}$ is known to take perturbations in the range $[-\epsilon, \epsilon]$. Then the robust counterpart of $(\mathcal{Q})$ is

$$
\begin{array}{lll} 
& \min & \langle-\bar{w}, x\rangle \\
(\mathcal{S}(\epsilon)) & \text { subject to } & C^{T} x+\epsilon E x \leq C^{T} e  \tag{4.1.6}\\
& x \geq 0
\end{array}
$$

Example 4.1.1. Consider the cone generated by $c^{1}=\binom{\sqrt{3} / 2}{1 / 2}, c^{2}=\binom{1 / 2}{\sqrt{3} / 2}$. Then $\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{1}, c^{2}\right\}\right)=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{2}: P x \geq 0\right\}$, where $P=\left[\begin{array}{cc}-1 / 2 & \sqrt{3} / 2 \\ \sqrt{3} / 2 & -1 / 2\end{array}\right]$. We translate cone $\left(\left\{c^{1}, c^{2}\right\}\right)$ by e and obtain the system

$$
\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{2}: P x \geq P e\right\}=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{2}:\left[\begin{array}{cc}
-1 / 2 & \sqrt{3} / 2 \\
\sqrt{3} / 2 & -1 / 2
\end{array}\right] x \geq\left[\begin{array}{l}
(\sqrt{3}-1) / 2 \\
(\sqrt{3}-1) / 2
\end{array}\right]\right\}
$$

The negative polar cone of cone $\left(\left\{c^{1}, c^{2}\right\}\right)$ is $\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{2}: C^{T} x \leq 0\right\}$, where $C=\left[c^{1}, c^{2}\right]$. We translate the vertex of $\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{2}: C^{T} x \leq 0\right\}$ to $e$ and obtain

$$
\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{2}: C^{T} x \leq C^{T} e\right\}=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{2}:\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\sqrt{3} / 2 & 1 / 2 \\
1 / 2 & \sqrt{3} / 2
\end{array}\right] x \leq\left[\begin{array}{l}
(\sqrt{3}+1) / 2 \\
(\sqrt{3}+1) / 2
\end{array}\right]\right\}
$$

See Figure 4.1.3.

(a) cone $(\mathcal{C})$ and $(\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C}))^{\circ}$.
(b) $\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C})+e$ and $(\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C}))^{\circ}+e$.

Figure 4.1.3: Two cones in (b) are translations of the cones in (a).

### 4.2 Primal and Dual Optimal Solutions to $(\mathcal{P})$ and $(\mathcal{Q})$

In this section, we find the primal and dual optimal solutions to $(\mathcal{P})$ (Section 4.2.1) and $(\mathcal{Q})$ (Section 4.2.2). We also show that the uniqueness of dual optimal solutions to $(\mathcal{P})$ and $(\mathcal{Q})$ depends on degeneracy/nondegeneracy of cone $(\mathcal{C})$.

### 4.2.1 The Optimal Solutions to $(\mathcal{P})$ and its Dual

We recall the primal problem

$$
\begin{array}{cl}
\min & \langle\bar{w}, x\rangle \\
\text { subject to } & P x \geq P e \in \mathbb{R}^{m} \\
& x \in \mathbb{R}_{+}^{n} .
\end{array}
$$

Then, the dual $(\mathcal{D} \mathcal{P})$ of the $\operatorname{primal}(\mathcal{P})$ is

|  | $\max$ | $\langle P e, y\rangle$ |
| :--- | :--- | :--- |
| $(\mathcal{D P})$ | subject to | $P^{T} y \leq \bar{w}$ |
|  | $y \geq 0$. |  |

Recall that the homogeneous inequalities $P x \geq 0$ define cone $(\mathcal{C})$. We now see that the shift to $P x \geq P e$ moves the vertex of the cone to $e$, which is the unique optimal solution to $(\mathcal{P})$. In addition, we see that degeneracy of cone $(\mathcal{C})$ directly corresponds to degeneracy of the dual optimal solutions. In other words, the number of extremal vectors of cone( $\mathcal{C}$ ) directly relates to the number of dual optimal solutions.

Lemma 4.2.1. Given the primal-dual pair $(\mathcal{P})$ and $(\mathcal{D P})$ above, we have the following:

1. The set of optimal solutions to ( $\mathcal{D P})$ satisfies

$$
\operatorname{Argmax}\left\{\langle P e, y\rangle: P^{T} y \leq \bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\}=\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{m}: P^{T} y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\} .
$$

2. The unique optimal solution to $(\mathcal{P})$ is $x=e$.
3. If cone $(\mathcal{C})$ is a nondegenerate cone, then $(\mathcal{D P})$ has a unique optimal solution.
4. If $\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C})$ is a degenerate cone, then $(\mathcal{D P})$ does not have a unique optimal solution.

Proof. 1. We note that $e$ is a feasible solution to $(\mathcal{P})$. We observe that

$$
\langle\bar{w}, e\rangle=\left\langle P^{T} y, e\right\rangle=\langle P e, y\rangle,
$$

for all $y \geq 0$ satisfying $P^{T} y=\bar{w}$. In other words, for each nonnegative vector $y$ such that $P^{T} y=\bar{w}, y$ achieves a primal objective value $\langle\bar{w}, e\rangle$. Hence, $\langle\bar{w}, e\rangle$ is the optimal value of $(\mathcal{D P})$ and

$$
\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{m}: P^{T} y=w, y \geq 0\right\} \subset \operatorname{Argmax}\left\{\langle P e, y\rangle: P^{T} y \leq \bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\}
$$

Now suppose to the contrary that

$$
\exists y^{\prime} \in \operatorname{Argmax}\left\{\langle P e, y\rangle: P^{T} y \leq \bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\} \backslash\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{m}: P^{T} y=w, y \geq 0\right\}
$$

Then, there exists $i \in\{1, \ldots, n\}$ such that $e_{i}^{T} P^{T} y^{\prime}<e_{i}^{T} \bar{w}$, i.e., one of the inequalities in $P^{T} y^{\prime} \leq \bar{w}$ must be strict. Then, we get

$$
\langle\bar{w}, e\rangle>\left\langle P^{T} y^{\prime}, e\right\rangle=\left\langle P e, y^{\prime}\right\rangle
$$

and $y^{\prime}$ does not achieve the primal objective value, which means that $y^{\prime}$ is not an optimal solution. Therefore, $\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{m}: P^{T} y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\}$ is the set of optimal solutions to ( $\mathcal{D P}$ ).
2. By observing the proof in Item 1 of Lemma 4.2.1 directly above, it also follows that $e$ is an optimal solution to $(\mathcal{P})$. Here, we show that $e$ is not only an optimal solution to $(\mathcal{P})$, but also the unique optimal solution to $(\mathcal{P})$.
Suppose that $x^{\prime}$ is an optimal solution to $(\mathcal{P})$. By Lemma 3.2.5 we get

$$
\bar{w} \in \operatorname{int}\left(\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{p^{1}, \ldots, p^{m}\right\}\right)\right) .
$$

Therefore we know that there exists a dual optimal solution $y^{\prime}>0$ such that $P^{T} y^{\prime}=$ $\bar{w}$. Hence, we have

$$
0 \leq\left\langle P x^{\prime}-P e, y^{\prime}\right\rangle=\left\langle P^{T} y^{\prime}, x^{\prime}\right\rangle-\left\langle P^{T} y^{\prime}, e\right\rangle=\left\langle\bar{w}, x^{\prime}\right\rangle-\left\langle P^{T} y^{\prime}, e\right\rangle=0
$$

The last inequality holds by strong duality. Thus we get

$$
\left\langle P x^{\prime}-P e, y^{\prime}\right\rangle=0, y^{\prime}>0 \Longrightarrow P x^{\prime}=P e .
$$

Since $P \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times n}$ with $m \geq n$ and $\operatorname{rank}(P)=n$, we have $\operatorname{rank}\left(P^{T} P\right)=n$. Hence,

$$
P^{T} P x^{\prime}=P^{T} P e \Longrightarrow x^{\prime}=e .
$$

Therefore, $x^{\prime}=e$ is the only optimal solution to $(\mathcal{P})$.
3. Since cone $(\mathcal{C})$ is nondegenerate, the dual cone has exactly $n$ extremal vectors by Proposition 3.1.14. By Lemma 3.2.5, we have $\bar{w} \in \operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{p^{1}, \ldots, p^{n}\right\}\right)$. Hence, there exists a nonnegative vector $y$ such that $\bar{w}=P^{T} y$. Since $P$ is a nonsingular matrix, the system $P^{T} y=\bar{w}$ has the unique solution.
4. Since cone $(\mathcal{C})$ is degenerate, cone $\left(\left\{p^{1}, \ldots, p^{m}\right\}\right)$ has more than $n$ extremal vectors by Proposition 3.1.14. Since cone $\left(\left\{p^{1}, \ldots, p^{m}\right\}\right)$ is a proper cone, it has a compact cone base $B$, say $B=\left\{b^{1}, \ldots, b^{m}\right\}$. Let $\bar{w}_{B} \in B$, where $\bar{w}_{B}=\gamma \bar{w}$, for some $\gamma>0$.
By Minkowski's theorem, we need at most $n$ extreme points in $B$ to represent $\bar{w}_{B}$ as a convex combination of extreme points, since $\operatorname{dim}(\operatorname{conv}(B))=n-1$. Hence, we have

$$
\bar{w}_{B}=\sum_{i \in \mathcal{I}} \lambda_{i} b^{i}, \lambda \geq 0 \text { and } \sum_{i \in \mathcal{I}} \lambda_{i}=1, \text { for some } \lambda \in \mathbb{R}^{n} \text { and }|\mathcal{I}|=n .
$$

Let $b^{j} \in B$, where $j \in[m] \backslash \mathcal{I}$. Then, by Lemma 2.1.5, we can write $\bar{w}_{B}$ as a convex combination that involves $b^{j}$. Since there are at least two distinct convex combinations for $\bar{w}_{B},(\mathcal{D P})$ does not have a unique optimal solution.

Remark 4.2.2. We note that previously in Section 3.2.2 we studied the relations between the two sets

$$
\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{m}: P^{T} y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\},\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{m}: Q^{T} y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\}
$$

The above results hold for both sets, i.e., for both $P, Q$.
Remark 4.2.3. Given a feasible primal-dual LP pair, it is well-known that there is a pair of primal-dual optimal solutions that satisfies the strict complementarity. We note that there is a vector $y^{\prime}>0$ satisfying $P^{T} y^{\prime}=\bar{w}$ by Lemma 3.2.5. Hence, with $x^{\prime}=e$, we see that $\left(x^{\prime}, y^{\prime}\right)$ is a pair of optimal solutions of $(\mathcal{P})$ and $(\mathcal{D P})$ that holds the strict complementarity.

### 4.2.2 The Optimal Solutions to $(\mathcal{Q})$ and its Dual

The argument in this section parallels the argument used in Section 4.2.1. A reader may skip the proof given in this section. We recall that

$$
\begin{array}{cl}
\min & \langle-\bar{w}, x\rangle \\
(\mathcal{Q}) \quad \text { subject to } & C^{T} x \leq C^{T} e \\
& x \geq 0
\end{array}
$$

Then, the dual $(\mathcal{D Q})$ of $(\mathcal{Q})$ is

$$
\begin{array}{cl}
\max & \left\langle-C^{T} e, y\right\rangle \\
(\mathcal{D Q}) \quad \text { subject to } & C y \geq \bar{w} \\
& y \geq 0
\end{array}
$$

We study the set of the primal-dual optimal solutions of the primal-dual LPs given above and show that the uniqueness of optimal solutions to $(\mathcal{D} \mathcal{Q})$ depends on the degeneracy/nondegeneracy of cone $(\mathcal{C})$.

Lemma 4.2.4. Given the primal-dual pair $(\mathcal{Q})$ and $(\mathcal{D Q})$ above, we have the following:

1. $\operatorname{Argmax}\left\{\left\langle-C^{T} e, y\right\rangle: C y \geq \bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\}=\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: C y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\}$,i.e., $\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{n}:\right.$ $C y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\}$ is the set of optimal solutions to $(\mathcal{D Q})$.
2. $x=e$ is the unique optimal solution to $(\mathcal{Q})$.
3. If cone $(\mathcal{C})$ is a nondegenerate cone, then $(\mathcal{D} \mathcal{Q})$ has a unique optimal solution.
4. If cone $(\mathcal{C})$ is a degenerate cone, then $(\mathcal{D} \mathcal{Q})$ does not have a unique optimal solution (See Example 3.2.2.).

Proof. 1. We use strong duality (See Proposition 2.3.5.) to find the optimal value of $(\mathcal{Q})$ and $(\mathcal{D Q})$. Since $x=e$ satisfies the constraints of $(\mathcal{Q}),(\mathcal{Q})$ is feasible. We also know that cone $(\mathcal{C})$ that $\bar{w} \in \operatorname{int}(\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C}))$ by Lemma 3.1.9. Hence, there exists a nonnegative vector $y$ such that $C y=\bar{w}$. Thus, $(\mathcal{D} \mathcal{Q})$ is feasible and strong duality holds, i.e., the optimal values of $(\mathcal{Q})$ and $(\mathcal{D} \mathcal{Q})$ coincide. For $y \geq 0$ such that $C y=\bar{w}$, we observe that

$$
\langle-\bar{w}, e\rangle=\langle-C y, e\rangle=\left\langle-C^{T} e, y\right\rangle .
$$

Hence, the optimal value of $(\mathcal{Q})$ and $(\mathcal{D} \mathcal{Q})$ is $\langle-\bar{w}, e\rangle$ and

$$
\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: C y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\} \subset \operatorname{Argmax}\left\{\left\langle-C^{T} e, y\right\rangle: C y \geq \bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\}
$$

Suppose to the contrary that

$$
\exists y^{\prime} \in \operatorname{Argmax}\left\{\left\langle-C^{T} e, y\right\rangle: C y \geq \bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\} \backslash\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: C y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\} .
$$

Then, there exists $i \in\{1, \ldots, m\}$ such that $e_{i}^{T} C y>e_{i}^{T} \bar{w}$, i.e., one of the inequalities of $C y \geq \bar{w}$ must be strict. Thus we get

$$
\left\langle C y^{\prime}, e\right\rangle>\langle\bar{w}, e\rangle \Longrightarrow\langle-\bar{w}, e\rangle>\left\langle-C y^{\prime}, e\right\rangle=\left\langle-C^{T} e, y^{\prime}\right\rangle .
$$

Since $y^{\prime}$ does not achieve the optimal value, $y^{\prime}$ is not an optimal solution. Therefore, $\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: C y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\}$ is the set of optimal solutions to $(\mathcal{D} \mathcal{Q})$.
2. By observing the proof in Item 1 of Lemma 4.2.4, it also follows that $e$ is an optimal solution to $(\mathcal{Q})$. Here, we show that $e$ is not only an optimal solution to $(\mathcal{Q})$, but also the unique optimal solution to $(\mathcal{Q})$.

Suppose that $x^{\prime}$ is an optimal solution to $(\mathcal{Q})$. We know that there exists a dual optimal solution $y^{\prime}>0$ such that $C y^{\prime}=\bar{w}$, since $\bar{w} \in \operatorname{int}(\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C}))$ by Lemma 3.1.9. Hence, we have

$$
0 \geq\left\langle C^{T} x^{\prime}-C^{T} e, y^{\prime}\right\rangle=\left\langle C y^{\prime}, x^{\prime}\right\rangle-\left\langle C y^{\prime}, e\right\rangle=\left\langle\bar{w}, x^{\prime}\right\rangle-\left\langle C y^{\prime}, e\right\rangle=0
$$

The last inequality holds by the strong duality. Thus we get

$$
\left\langle C^{T} x^{\prime}-C^{T} e, y^{\prime}\right\rangle=0, y^{\prime}>0 \Longrightarrow C^{T} x^{\prime}=C^{T} e
$$

Since $C \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times k}$ with $k \geq n$ and $\operatorname{rank}(C)=n$, we have $\operatorname{rank}\left(C C^{T}\right)=n$. Hence,

$$
C C^{T} x^{\prime}=C C^{T} e \Longrightarrow x^{\prime}=e
$$

Therefore, $x^{\prime}=e$ is the only optimal solution to $(\mathcal{Q})$.
Remark 4.2.5. We note that previously in Section 3.2.1 we studied the relations between the two sets

$$
\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{k}: C y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\},\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{k}: D y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\}
$$

The above results hold for both sets, i.e., for both $C, D$.

Remark 4.2.6. Given a feasible primal-dual $\boldsymbol{L P}$ pair, it is well-known that there is a pair of primal-dual optimal solutions that satisfies the strict complementarity. We note that there is a vector $y^{\prime}>0$ satisfying $C y^{\prime}=\bar{w}$ by Lemma 3.1.9. Hence, with $x^{\prime}=e$, we see that $\left(x^{\prime}, y^{\prime}\right)$ is a pair of optimal solutions of $(\mathcal{Q})$ and $(\mathcal{D Q})$ that holds the strict complementarity.

### 4.3 Properties of the Optimal Value Functions

In this section, we study some basic properties of the optimal value functions of $(\mathcal{P})$ and $(\mathcal{Q})$ and its robust counterparts.

We define the optimal value function $\psi(\epsilon)$ of the robust counterpart $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon))$ in (4.1.5):

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon)) \quad \psi(\epsilon):=\min \{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle:(P-\epsilon E) x \geq P e, x \geq 0\} \tag{4.3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

We interchangeably use the notations $(\mathcal{P})$ and $(\mathcal{R}(0))$, since $(\mathcal{R}(0))$ and $(\mathcal{P})$ are the same LP. If we want to emphasize the matrix $P$ in (4.3.1), we write

$$
(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, P)) \quad \psi_{P}(\epsilon):=\min \{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle:(P-\epsilon E) x \geq P e, x \geq 0\}
$$

Similarly, we define the optimal value function $\phi(\epsilon)$ of the robust counterpart $(\mathcal{S}(\epsilon))$ in (4.1.6):

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\mathcal{S}(\epsilon)) \quad \phi(\epsilon):=\min \left\{\langle-\bar{w}, x\rangle:\left(C^{T}+\epsilon E\right) x \leq C^{T} e, x \geq 0\right\} \tag{4.3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

We note that $(\mathcal{S}(0))$ and $(\mathcal{Q})$ are the same LP. If we want to put an emphasis on the matrix $C$ in (4.3.2), we write

$$
(\mathcal{S}(\epsilon, C)) \quad \phi_{C}(\epsilon):=\min \left\{\langle-\bar{w}, x\rangle:\left(C^{T}+\epsilon E\right) x \leq C^{T} e, x \geq 0\right\}
$$

We study some properties of the optimal value function $\psi(\epsilon)$. By making necessary changes to the arguments below, we can show that the same properties that hold for $\psi(\epsilon)$ also hold for $\phi(\epsilon)$.

1. For some $\bar{\epsilon}>0$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi(\epsilon) \text { is a non-decreasing monotone function on }[0, \bar{\epsilon}], \tag{4.3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

by the definition of robust counterpart. We recall from the first line of (2.4.3) that

$$
\begin{gathered}
x \text { is robust feasible to } \tilde{a}^{T} x \leq \tilde{\beta}, \forall(\tilde{a}, \tilde{\beta}) \in \mathcal{U} \\
a^{\Uparrow} x \leq \beta, \forall[a ; \beta] \in\left\{\left[a^{0} ; \beta^{0}\right]+\sum_{\ell=1}^{L} \zeta_{\ell}\left[a^{\ell} ; \beta^{\ell}\right], \zeta \in \mathcal{Z}\right\}, \text { for some } \mathcal{Z} .
\end{gathered}
$$

In our case,

$$
\begin{gathered}
x \text { is robust feasible to } \tilde{a}^{T} x \leq \beta, \forall \tilde{a}_{i} \in\left[a_{i}-\epsilon, a_{i}+\epsilon\right] \\
a^{T} x \leq \beta, \forall[a ; \beta] \in\left\{\left[a^{0} ; \beta^{0}\right]+\sum_{\ell=1}^{L} \zeta_{\ell}[e ; 0], \zeta \in\left\{u:\|u\|_{\infty} \leq \epsilon\right\}\right\} .
\end{gathered}
$$

This implies that if the perturbation set gets bigger (i.e., $\epsilon$ increases), then the uncertainty set gets bigger. Hence, the robust optimal value cannot decrease as the feasible region of the robust $\mathbf{L P}$ gets smaller.
2. We observe that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi(0)<\psi(\epsilon), \forall \epsilon>0 \tag{4.3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

We recall that $e$ is the only optimal solution to $(\mathcal{P})$ (See Item 2 of Lemma 4.2.1.), and $e$ does not satisfy the inequality $P x-\epsilon E x \geq P e, \forall \epsilon>0$. We note by the above that the feasible region of $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon))$ gets smaller as $\epsilon$ increases. Thus (4.3.4) holds, since the feasible region of $(\mathcal{R}(0))$ contains the feasible region of $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon))$ and $e$ is no longer feasible for $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon)), \forall \epsilon>0$.
3. Given two cones cone $(\mathcal{C})$ and cone $(\mathcal{D})$ constructed by the vectors from (3.1.2) and (3.1.12), respectively, we have

$$
\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: P x \geq 0\right\}=\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C}) \subset \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: Q x \geq 0\right\}
$$

We observe the following:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{P}(0)=\psi_{Q}(0) \tag{4.3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

The equality (4.3.5) holds because Item 2 of Lemma 4.2 .1 holds for any cone constructed by (3.1.3). In other words, we have constructed a family of LPs that have the same optimal value and the same optimal solution.

Item 1 above states that $\psi(\epsilon)$ is a nondecreasing function. Furthermore, if the optimal solution of $(\mathcal{P})$ is nondegenerate (i.e., exactly $n$ constraints are active at the optimal solution), we can show that $\psi(\epsilon)$ is a strictly increasing function and we show this in Section 4.4.2. Given $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, P))$ and $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, Q))$, Item 2 above states that $\psi_{P}(0)<\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ and $\psi_{Q}(0)<\psi_{Q}(\epsilon), \forall \epsilon>0$. Item 3 above states that $\psi_{P}(0)=\psi_{Q}(0)$. In other words, both $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ and $\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$ have the same function value at $\epsilon=0$ and both function values increase for $\epsilon>0$. In Section 4.4.2 (in nondegenerate cases) and Section 4.5.3 (in degenerate cases), we show that $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ always increases more than $\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$ for small $\epsilon>0$. That is, $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ is more sensitive than $\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$ due to its local geometric structure.

### 4.4 The Strict Monotonicity and Sensitivity of the Optimal Value Function: Nondegenerate Cases

In this section we focus on $(\mathcal{P})$ where exactly $n$ halfspaces are active at the optimal solution $e$. In this case, we say ( $\mathcal{P}$ ) is nondegenerate.

### 4.4.1 Known Results on Parametric LP: Nondegenerate Cases

We first present some known results on a parametric $\mathbf{L P}$ under linear, scalar $\theta$ perturbations of the coefficient matrix. We define a family of LPs in SEF

$$
\begin{equation*}
\boldsymbol{L P}(\theta) \quad z(\theta):=\min \left\{\langle c, x\rangle: A^{\theta} x=b, x \geq 0\right\} \tag{4.4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $A^{\theta}=F+\theta G \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times n}$, for some $F, G \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times n}$ and $\theta \in \mathbb{R}$. For completeness, we include the proof of the following theorem on parametric $\mathbf{L P}$ in the nondegenerate case. In the following theorem, nondegenerate basis refers to a basis where the basic variables associated with the basis are nonzero.

Theorem 4.4.1 ([12, Theorem 1]). ${ }^{1}$ Let $P(\theta)$ be an instance of the parametric $\boldsymbol{L P}$ as given in (4.4.1), and let $\bar{\theta} \in \mathbb{R}$ be given. Suppose that $\mathcal{B}$ is a unique nondegenerate optimal basis for $P(\bar{\theta})$, and $\bar{x}$ and $\bar{\pi}$ are unique optimal solutions to $P(\bar{\theta})$ and its dual, respectively. Then for all $\theta$ near (in a neighbourhood of) $\bar{\theta}, \mathcal{B}$ is a nondegenerate optimal basis for $P(\theta)$, and the optimal value function $z(\theta)$ and the optimal solution $x(\theta)$ of $P(\theta)$ hold the following:
(1) $z(\theta)=\sum_{i=0}^{\infty} c_{\mathcal{B}}^{T}(\theta-\bar{\theta})^{i}\left(-B^{-1} G_{\mathcal{B}}\right)^{i} \bar{x}_{\mathcal{B}}$,
(2) $z^{k}(\theta)=\sum_{i=k}^{\infty} \frac{i!}{(i-k)!} c_{\mathcal{B}}^{T}(\theta-\bar{\theta})^{(i-k)}\left(-B^{-1} G_{\mathcal{B}}\right)^{i} \bar{x}_{\mathcal{B}}$, for $k \in \mathbb{N}$, where $z^{k}(\theta)$ is the $k$-th derivative of $z(\theta)$,
(3) $x(\theta)=\left(x_{\mathcal{B}}(\theta), x_{N}(\theta)\right)=\left(\sum_{i=0}^{\infty}(\theta-\bar{\theta})^{i}\left(-B^{-1} G_{\mathcal{B}}\right)^{i} \bar{x}_{\mathcal{B}}, 0\right)$,
(4) $z^{k}(\bar{\theta})=(k!) c_{\mathcal{B}}^{T}\left(-B^{-1} G_{\mathcal{B}}\right)^{k} \bar{x}_{\mathcal{B}}$,
where $B=A_{\mathcal{B}}^{\bar{\theta}}$.
Proof. We show $(3) \Longrightarrow(1) \Longrightarrow(2) \Longrightarrow(4)$. Let $B=A_{\mathcal{B}}^{\bar{\theta}}$ be the optimal basis matrix of $P(\bar{\theta})$. We observe that

$$
A_{\mathcal{B}}^{\theta}=F_{\mathcal{B}}+\theta G_{\mathcal{B}}, B=A_{\mathcal{B}}^{\bar{\theta}}=F_{\mathcal{B}}+\bar{\theta} G_{\mathcal{B}} .
$$

[^3]Hence, we have

$$
A_{\mathcal{B}}^{\theta}-B=(\theta-\bar{\theta}) G_{\mathcal{B}}
$$

For all $\theta$ near $\bar{\theta},\left(A_{\mathcal{B}}^{\theta}\right)^{-1}$ exists and so

$$
\begin{equation*}
I=A_{\mathcal{B}}^{\theta}\left(A_{\mathcal{B}}^{\theta}\right)^{-1}=\left(B+(\theta-\bar{\theta}) G_{\mathcal{B}}\right)\left(A_{\mathcal{B}}^{\theta}\right)^{-1} \tag{4.4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Premultiplying $B^{-1}$ to (4.4.2) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
B^{-1}=\left(I+(\theta-\bar{\theta}) B^{-1} G_{\mathcal{B}}\right)\left(A_{\mathcal{B}}^{\theta}\right)^{-1} \Longrightarrow\left(A_{\mathcal{B}}^{\theta}\right)^{-1}=B^{-1}-(\theta-\bar{\theta})\left(B^{-1} G_{\mathcal{B}}\right)\left(A_{\mathcal{B}}^{\theta}\right)^{-1} . \tag{4.4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

By recursively substituting for $\left(A_{\mathcal{B}}^{\theta}\right)^{-1}$ in (4.4.3), we obtain

$$
\left(A_{\mathcal{B}}^{\theta}\right)^{-1}=\sum_{i=0}^{\infty}(\theta-\bar{\theta})^{i}\left(-B^{-1} G_{\mathcal{B}}\right)^{i} B^{-1} .
$$

(This series converges for all $\theta$ such that $|\theta-\bar{\theta}|<1 / \rho\left(-B^{-1} G_{\mathcal{B}}\right)$. See Lemma 4.4.4.) Item (3) follows from $x_{\mathcal{B}}(\theta)=\left(A_{\mathcal{B}}^{\theta}\right)^{-1} b$. Item (1) follows from $z(\theta)=c^{T} x(\theta)=c_{\mathcal{B}}^{T} x_{\mathcal{B}}(\theta)$. Taking derivatives from (1) gives (2). Plugging $\bar{\theta}$ into $\theta$ in (2) gives (4).

We can obtain a simple formula by considering a special case of Item (4) in Theorem 4.4.1. We introduce the following lemma first.

## Lemma 4.4.2. Consider the $\boldsymbol{L P}$ in $\boldsymbol{S E F}$

$$
\boldsymbol{L P} \quad \max \{\langle c, x\rangle: A x=b, x \geq 0\} .
$$

Suppose that $x^{*}$ is a nondegenerate optimal basic feasible solution with basis $\mathcal{B}$. Then, a corresponding dual optimal solution is $y^{*}=\left(A_{\mathcal{B}}^{T}\right)^{-1} c_{\mathcal{B}}$. In addition, if there is a unique nondegenerate optimal solution, then there is a unique dual optimal solution.

Proof. Let $x^{*}$ be a nondegenerate optimal feasible solution and $y^{*}$ a dual optimal solution. Then complementary slackness implies

$$
\left(c_{j}-A(:, j)^{T} y^{*}\right) x_{j}^{*}=0, \forall j \in \mathcal{B} \Longrightarrow A(:, j)^{T} y^{*}=c_{j}, \forall j \in \mathcal{B} .
$$

Since $A_{\mathcal{B}}$ is nonsingular,

$$
\begin{equation*}
y^{*}=\left(A_{\mathcal{B}}^{T}\right)^{-1} c_{\mathcal{B}} \tag{4.4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

The uniqueness is clear.
With Lemma 4.4.2, we have the following corollary.
Corollary 4.4.3. The derivative of the optimal value function of $\boldsymbol{L P}(\theta)$ at $\bar{\theta}$ exists and is

$$
z^{\prime}(\bar{\theta})=-\bar{\pi}^{T} G \bar{x}
$$

Proof. By pugging $k=1$ into Item (4) in Lemma 4.4.1, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
z^{\prime}(\bar{\theta}) & =(1!) c_{\mathcal{B}}^{T}\left(-B^{-1} G_{\mathcal{B}}\right)^{1} \bar{x}_{\mathcal{B}} \\
& =-c_{\mathcal{B}}^{T} B^{-1} G_{\mathcal{B}} \bar{x}_{\mathcal{B}} \\
& =-c_{\mathcal{B}}^{T}\left(A_{\mathcal{B}}^{\bar{\theta}}\right)^{-1} G \bar{x} \\
& =-\bar{\pi}^{T} G \bar{x},
\end{aligned}
$$

where dual solution is given by $\bar{\pi}^{T}=c_{\mathcal{B}}^{T}\left(A_{\mathcal{B}}^{\bar{\theta}}\right)^{-1}$ in (4.4.4).

### 4.4.2 The Monotonicity and Sensitivity in Nondegenerate Cases

In this section, we confine ourselves to the case where our data matrix $P$ of
$(\mathcal{P}) \quad \min \{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle: P x \geq P e, x \geq 0\}$
is a square matrix. In other words, there are exactly $n$ active halfspaces at the optimal solution $e$. In this case, we recall that there are exactly $n$ extreme rays in cone $(\mathcal{C})=\{x \in$ $\left.\mathbb{R}^{n}: P x \geq 0\right\}$ by Proposition 3.1.14. We also recall that $x^{*}=e$ is the unique optimal solution to $(\mathcal{P})$ by Item 2 of Lemma 4.2.1. The uniqueness of optimal solution does not change after transforming $(\mathcal{P})$ into SEF. Therefore,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\min \{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle: P x-I s=P e, x \geq 0, s \geq 0\} \tag{4.4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

has a unique nondegenerate optimal solution, which is given by $\binom{x^{*}}{s^{*}}=\binom{e}{0}$, with the optimal basis $\mathcal{B}=\{1, \ldots, n\}$. We showed in Lemma 4.4.2 that the dual of $\mathbf{L P}$ (4.4.5) has a unique optimal solution as well.

Our aim in this section is to show the following:

1. $\psi(\epsilon)$ is a strictly increasing function on $[0, \bar{\epsilon}]$, for some $\bar{\epsilon}>0$.

We showed in (4.3.3) that $\psi(\epsilon)$ is a non-decreasing function. When we have nondegeneracy, we can guarantee that $\psi(\epsilon)$ is a strictly increasing function.
2. Given two cones cone $(\mathcal{C})$ and $\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})$ constructed by the vectors in (3.1.2) and (3.1.12), respectively, we have

$$
\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: P x \geq 0\right\}=\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C}) \subset \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: Q x \geq 0\right\}
$$

We define two LPs

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \psi_{P}(\epsilon)=\min \{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle:(P e-\epsilon E) x \geq P e, x \geq 0\} \\
& \psi_{Q}(\epsilon)=\min \{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle:(Q e-\epsilon E) x \geq Q e, x \geq 0\}
\end{aligned}
$$

Then, there is $\bar{\mu}>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{P}(\epsilon)>\psi_{Q}(\epsilon), \forall \epsilon \in(0, \bar{\mu}) \tag{4.4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

The strict inequality in (4.4.6) implies that

$$
\psi_{P}(\epsilon)-\psi_{P}(0)>\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)-\psi_{Q}(0), \forall \epsilon \in(0, \bar{\mu}) .
$$

This means that when $(\mathcal{P})$ has a locally smaller feasible region, the difference between its nominal optimal value and robust optimal value is larger than when $(\mathcal{P})$ has a locally bigger feasible region. In other words, a locally small feasible region of an $\mathbf{L P}$ drives the problem more sensitive under data uncertainty. Throughout this thesis, we often omit the word 'locally' and state 'smaller feasible region' instead of 'locally smaller feasible region'. Similarly, we often state 'bigger feasible region' instead of 'locally bigger feasible region'.

## The Strict Monotonicity of Robust Optimal Value Function $\psi(\epsilon)$

In this section, we show that $\psi(\epsilon)$ is a differentiable strictly increasing function, for all positive $\epsilon$ near $\bar{\epsilon}=0$. That is,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi^{\prime}(\epsilon)>0, \text { for } \epsilon>0 \text { near } 0 . \tag{4.4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

We recall from (4.3.3) that $\psi(\epsilon)$ is a non-decreasing function due the the definition of robust counterpart.

To show (4.4.7), we make use of Item (2) of Theorem 4.4.1:

$$
\begin{equation*}
z^{\prime}(\theta)=\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} i c_{\mathcal{B}}^{T}(\theta-\bar{\theta})^{(i-1)}\left(-B^{-1} G_{\mathcal{B}}\right)^{i} \bar{x}_{\mathcal{B}} \tag{4.4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

We note that Theorem 4.4.1 is written with LPs in SEF. Hence, we first write $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon))$ in SEF :

$$
\begin{align*}
\psi(\epsilon)=\quad \min \quad & \langle\bar{w}, x\rangle \\
\text { subject to } & {[P-\epsilon E,}  \tag{4.4.9}\\
& \left.-I_{n}\right]\binom{x}{s}=P e \\
& x, s \geq 0
\end{align*}
$$

We can write the constraint coefficient matrix of (4.4.9) in an explicit parametric form:

$$
\left[\begin{array}{ll}
P-\epsilon E, & -I
\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
P & -I
\end{array}\right]+\epsilon\left[\begin{array}{ll}
-E & O \tag{4.4.10}
\end{array}\right] .
$$

In our case, the data we should consider in (4.4.8) is the following:

$$
\theta=\epsilon, \bar{\theta}=0, B=P \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n}, G_{\mathcal{B}}=-E \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n} \text { and } \bar{x}_{\mathcal{B}}=e .
$$

The $i$-th term of the series in (4.4.8) becomes

$$
i c_{\mathcal{B}}^{T}(\theta-\bar{\theta})^{(i-1)}\left(-B^{-1} G_{\mathcal{B}}\right)^{i} \bar{x}_{\mathcal{B}}=i \epsilon^{i-1} c_{\mathcal{B}}^{T} B^{-1}\left(E B^{-1}\right)^{i-1} E e=i n \epsilon^{i-1} y^{T}\left(E B^{-1}\right)^{i-1} e,
$$

where $y$ is the dual optimal solution to $(\mathcal{P})$ by Lemma 4.4.2. Hence, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi^{\prime}(\epsilon)=n y^{T}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} i \epsilon^{i-1}\left(E B^{-1}\right)^{i-1}\right) e . \tag{4.4.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

We first check the convergence for small $\epsilon$ of the matrix power series in (4.4.11):

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} i \epsilon^{i-1}\left(E B^{-1}\right)^{i-1} \tag{4.4.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

The radius of convergence of the scalar power series $\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} a_{k} z^{k}$ is

$$
R=1 /\left(\limsup _{k \rightarrow \infty} \sqrt[k]{\left|a_{k}\right|}\right)
$$

and is equal to $\lim _{k \rightarrow \infty}\left|\frac{a_{k}}{a_{k+1}}\right|$, if the limit exists. The spectral radius of a matrix $A \in \mathbb{C}^{n \times n}$ is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho(A):=\max \left\{\left|\lambda_{i}\right|: \lambda_{i} \text { is an eigenvalue of } A\right\} . \tag{4.4.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lemma 4.4.4 ([19, Theorem 5.6.15]). Let $R$ be the radius of convergence of a scalar power series $\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} a_{k} z^{k}$, and let $A \in \mathbb{C}^{n \times n}$ be given. The matrix power series $\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} a_{k} A^{k}$ converges, if $\rho(A)<R$.

Now we show that $\psi^{\prime}(\epsilon)>0$, for small $\epsilon>0$. Let $a_{k}=k \epsilon^{k-1}$. Then, we have

$$
R=\lim _{k \rightarrow \infty}\left|\frac{a_{k}}{a_{k+1}}\right|=\lim _{k \rightarrow \infty}\left|\frac{k}{k+1} \frac{1}{\epsilon}\right|=\frac{1}{\epsilon} .
$$

Hence, as long as we have $\rho\left(E B^{-1}\right)<1 / \epsilon$, the series in (4.4.12) converges. Since $E B^{-1}$ is a rank one matrix, there is exactly one nonzero eigenvalue of $E B^{-1}$. We note that the nonzero eigenvalue of $E B^{-1}$ is $e^{T} B^{-1} e$ and the corresponding eigenvector is $e$. Thus the spectral radius of $E B^{-1}$ is

$$
\rho\left(E B^{-1}\right)=\left|e^{T} B^{-1} e\right|
$$

Hence, Lemma 4.4.4 reads, if $\left|e^{T} B^{-1} e\right|<1 / \epsilon$, the series (4.4.12) converges. Thus we assume that $\epsilon$ is given small enough so that $\left|e^{T} B^{-1} e\right|<1 / \epsilon$ is satisfied.

Let $\lambda:=e^{T} B^{-1} e$. Since $E B^{-1} e=\lambda e,(4.4 .11)$ becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi^{\prime}(\epsilon)=n y^{T}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} i \epsilon^{i-1}\left(E B^{-1}\right)^{i-1} e\right)=n y^{T}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} i(\epsilon \lambda)^{i-1} e\right) . \tag{4.4.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Each coordinate of the vector $\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} i(\epsilon \lambda)^{i-1} e$ in (4.4.14) has the same value. Hence, in order to study the convergence of vector series (4.4.14), we may consider a series on $\mathbb{R}$, that is of the form $\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} c_{k}$, where $c_{k}=k(\epsilon \lambda)^{k-1}$.

We first recall the formula for a general geometric series and its derivative. We define a function $f(z):=\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} z^{k}$, with the domain $\{z \in \mathbb{R}:|z|<1\}$. Then, the geometric series converges to $1 /(1-z)$. $f(z)$ is well-defined and differentiable on $z \in(-1,1)$. Hence, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
f^{\prime}(z)=\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} k z^{k-1}=\frac{1}{(1-z)^{2}}>0 \tag{4.4.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus the series $\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} c_{k}$ with $c_{k}=k(\epsilon \lambda)^{k-1}$, with $|\epsilon \lambda|<1$, converges to a positive number by (4.4.15). Therefore, if $\epsilon>0$ satisfies $\left|e^{T} B^{-1} e\right|<1 / \epsilon$, then

$$
\left(\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} i \epsilon^{i-1}\left(E B^{-1}\right)^{i-1}\right) e>0 .
$$

We recall that $n y^{T} \geq 0$ and $y \neq 0$. Thus we have $\psi^{\prime}(\epsilon)>0$ (See (4.4.11).), and (4.4.7) is verified.

## The Strict Inequality $\psi_{P}^{\prime}(0)>\psi_{Q}^{\prime}(0)$

We recall that the constraint coefficient matrix of $\mathbf{L P}$ (4.4.9) in a parametric form is

$$
\left[\begin{array}{ll}
P-\epsilon E, & -I
\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
P & -I
\end{array}\right]+\epsilon\left[\begin{array}{ll}
-E & O
\end{array}\right] .
$$

Let $y$ be the dual variable associated with the equality constraints at $\epsilon=0$. Then, by Corollary 4.4.3, we have

$$
\psi^{\prime}(0)=-y^{* T}\left[\begin{array}{ll}
-E & O
\end{array}\right]\binom{x^{*}}{s^{*}}=-y^{* T}\left[\begin{array}{ll}
-E e & 0 \tag{4.4.16}
\end{array}\right]=y^{* T} E e,
$$

where $\left(x^{*}, s^{*}\right)$ and $y^{*}$ are the primal-dual optimal solutions. We note that $y^{* T} E e$ does not involve the slack variable $s^{*}$. Hence, we may consider the optimal solution of $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon))$ without transforming into SEF to study the sensitivity.

Suppose that we have two robust counterparts,

$$
\begin{align*}
& \psi_{P}(\epsilon)=\min \{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle:(P-\epsilon E) x \geq P e, x \geq 0\}  \tag{4.4.17}\\
& \psi_{Q}(\epsilon)=\min \{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle:(Q-\epsilon E) x \geq Q e, x \geq 0\} \tag{4.4.18}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C})=\{x: P x \geq 0\}, \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})=\{x: Q x \geq 0\}$ and cone $(\mathcal{C}) \subsetneq \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})$. Let $x_{P}^{*}$ and $x_{Q}^{*}$ be the optimal solutions to (4.4.17) and (4.4.18), respectively, when $\epsilon=0$. We know that $x_{P}^{*}=x_{Q}^{*}=e$ by Item 2 of Lemma 4.2.1. Let $y_{P}^{*}$ and $y_{Q}^{*}$ be the optimal solutions to the duals of (4.4.17) and (4.4.18), when $\epsilon=0$. We recall from Item 1 of Lemma 4.2.1
that the set of dual optimal solutions to $(\mathcal{R}(0, P))$ is

$$
\left\{y_{P} \in \mathbb{R}^{m}: P^{T} y_{P}=\bar{w}, y_{p} \geq 0\right\}
$$

Similarly, the set of dual optimal solutions of $(\mathcal{R}(0, Q))$ is

$$
\left\{y_{Q} \in \mathbb{R}^{m}: Q^{T} y_{Q}=\bar{w}, y_{Q} \geq 0\right\}
$$

We recall that, for all nonnegative $y_{P}$ such that $P^{T} y_{P}=\bar{w}$, there exists $y_{Q} \geq 0$ such that $Q^{T} y_{Q}=\bar{w}$ and $y_{P} \geq y_{Q}$, by Lemma 3.2.10. Therefore, using Corollary 4.4.3, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \psi_{P}^{\prime}(0)=-\left(y_{P}^{*}\right)^{T}(-E) x_{P}^{*}=\left(y_{P}^{*}\right)^{T} E e=n e^{T} y_{P}^{*} \\
& \psi_{Q}^{\prime}(0)=-\left(y_{Q}^{*}\right)^{T}(-E) x_{Q}^{*}=\left(y_{Q}^{*}\right)^{T} E e=n e^{T} y_{Q}^{*}
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $y_{P} \geq y_{Q}$ and $y_{P} \neq y_{Q}$, we conclude that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{P}^{\prime}(0)>\psi_{Q}^{\prime}(0) \tag{4.4.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

That is, when the feasible region is smaller, its robust optimal value is more sensitive at $\epsilon=0$. We state the result (4.4.19) in the proposition below. The above argument gives the proof for the following proposition.

Proposition 4.4.5. For the two robust optimal value functions $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ and $\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$ with nondegenerate optimal solutions, we have

$$
\psi_{P}^{\prime}(0)>\psi_{Q}^{\prime}(0)
$$

The Strict inequality $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)>\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$
Now we want to show that

$$
\psi_{P}(\epsilon)>\psi_{Q}(\epsilon), \forall \epsilon \in(0, \bar{\epsilon}), \text { for some } \bar{\epsilon}>0
$$

We summarize the results we have so far:
(1) $\psi_{P}(0)=\psi_{Q}(0)($ See $(4.3 .5)$ on page 64.$)$,
(2) $\psi_{P}^{\prime}(0)>\psi_{Q}^{\prime}(0)$ (See Proposition 4.4.5.).

We observe the following: By Item (1) and Item (2) above, we have

$$
0<\lim _{h \rightarrow 0} \frac{\psi_{P}(h)-\psi_{p}(0)-\psi_{Q}(h)+\psi_{Q}(0)}{h}=\lim _{h \rightarrow 0} \frac{\psi_{P}(h)-\psi_{Q}(h)}{h} .
$$

Therefore, we conclude the following:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\text { There is an interval } I=(0, \bar{\epsilon}) \text { such that } \psi_{P}(\epsilon)>\psi_{Q}(\epsilon), \forall \epsilon \in I \text {. } \tag{4.4.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

This implies that

$$
\psi_{P}(\epsilon)-\psi_{P}(0)>\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)-\psi_{Q}(0), \forall \epsilon \in I
$$

That is, there is an interval such that the robust optimal value of a smaller feasible region is always worse than the robust optimal value of a bigger feasible region.

### 4.4.3 The Robust Optimal Value Function $\phi(\epsilon)$

In this section, we make a brief note on the robust optimal value function $\phi(\epsilon)$ of the robust counterpart $(\mathcal{S}(\epsilon))$. A reader who wishes to recall the definition of $\phi(\epsilon)$ and $(\mathcal{S}(\epsilon))$ may refer to Section 4.2.2 and Section 4.3.

In the previous sections, we have studied the optimal value function $\psi(\epsilon)$ of $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon))$ under the nondegenerate case. We note that the argument on the optimal value function $\phi(\epsilon)$ of $(\mathcal{S}(\epsilon))$ parallels the argument in the previous sections owing to Lemma 3.2.1 (Note that Lemma 3.2.10 played an important role on getting the sensitivity result in Section 4.4.2.). Thus, by making necessary changes in the previous section, we have the following result:

1. $\phi(\epsilon)$ is a strictly increasing function for all $\epsilon$ near 0 ,
2. There is an interval $I=(0, \bar{\epsilon})$ such that $\phi_{C}(\epsilon)<\phi_{D}(\epsilon), \forall \epsilon \in I$.

We recall that cone $(\mathcal{C})^{\circ} \supset \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})^{\circ}$ since polarization is order-reversing (See Lemma 2.1.25.). Hence, the above argument also shows that there is an interval such that the robust optimal value of a smaller feasible region is always worse than the robust optimal value of a bigger feasible region.

### 4.5 The Sensitivity of the Optimal Value Function: Degenerate Cases

In this section, we focus on $(\mathcal{P})$, where more than $n$ halfspaces are active at the optimal solution $e$. When an LP in SEF has a degenerate basic optimal solution, we obtain more than one optimal basis. Hence, the approach used in Theorem 4.4.1 is no longer valid.

A reader may question that we can use the approach introduced by Fiacco [11] as $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon))$ is in a nice parametric form. Fiacco in [11] contains a comprehensive sensitivity analysis on parametric nonlinear programming (hence applicable to LPs) and nice formulae for the derivatives of optimal solutions and optimal values with respect to the parameters. However, most of the arguments are presented under the linear independence constraint qualification. This triggers problems when the number of active constraints of an $\mathbf{L P}$ at its optimal solution is bigger than its dimension. In this case, the Jacobian matrix contains the gradients of the active linear constraints and hence it is not invertible. Thus, instead
of using the approach from [11], we perform our analysis using directional differentiability. A reader interested in non-linear parametric programming may refer to $[3,11]$.

The rest of this section is organized as follows: In Section 4.5.1, we present why the optimal value function $\psi(\epsilon)$ might not be differentiable at $\epsilon=0$ in the presence of degeneracy. In Section 4.5.2, we present that the optimal value function $\psi(\epsilon)$ is directionally differentiable. In Section 4.5.3, with directional differentiability obtained in Secion 4.5.2, we conclude the same result stated in (4.4.20) in degenerate cases. In Section 4.5.4, we suggest a sufficient condition for differentiability of $\psi(\epsilon)$ at $\epsilon=0$. Finally, in Section 4.5.5, we show that the properties hold for the optimal value function $\psi(\epsilon)$ for $\mathbf{L P}(\mathcal{P})$ also hold for the optimal value function $\phi(\epsilon)$ for $\mathbf{L P}(\mathcal{Q})$.

### 4.5.1 The Generalized Directional Derivative

We recall that the optimal value function $\psi(\epsilon)$ is differentiable by Theorem 4.4.1, given that the LP is nondegenerate. In this section, we show where the non-differentiability of $\psi(\epsilon)$ comes from in degenerate cases.

## Known Results on Parametric LP: Degenerate Cases

Theorem 4.5.1 ([32, Theorem 1]). Given $c \in \mathbb{R}^{n}, b \in \mathbb{R}^{m}$ and $A \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times n}$, consider the following $\boldsymbol{L P}$

$$
\tilde{z}(A)=\max \{\langle c, x\rangle: A x=b, x \geq 0\}
$$

Let $\operatorname{dom}(\tilde{z})$, i.e., the domain of $\tilde{z}$ be $\left\{A \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times n}: \tilde{z}(A)\right.$ is finite $\}$. If
(1) $A$ is an interior point of $\operatorname{dom}(\tilde{z})$, and
(2) $\tilde{z}(A)$ is locally Lipschitz in a neighbourhood of $A$,
then

$$
\partial \tilde{z}(A)=\operatorname{conv}\left\{-u x^{T}: \begin{array}{l}
u \text { is any optimal dual solution, } \\
\\
x \text { is any primal optimal solution }\}
\end{array}\right.
$$

Remark 4.5.2. We note that Theorem 4.5.1 is also applicable to nondegenerate cases. In the nondegenerate case, optimal solutions $x$ and $u$ of a primal-dual pair are unique. Then, each entry of $\partial \tilde{z}(A)$ is a real number, rather than an interval (under the assumption that the hypotheses of Theorem 4.5.1 were satisfied.).

## The Generalized Directional Derivative of the Optimal Value Function $\hat{z}$

In this section, we want to show where the non-differentiability of the optimal value function might be coming from, by utilizing Theorem 4.5.1. We also study the generalized directional derivative of the optimal value function of $(\mathcal{P})$ in SEF. Hence, we check that the hypotheses of Theorem 4.5.1 are satisfied with our LP :

1. We first introduce Proposition 4.5 .3 to relate the first hypothesis (1) of Theorem 4.5.1. Proposition 4.5.3 states that for a primal-dual pair of LPs satisfying the regularity condition, any small perturbations around given data do not render the pair unsolvable.
2. We mention [8, Theorem 4.3] to relate the second hypothesis (2) of Theorem 4.5.1. [8, Theorem 4.3] states the Lipschitz property of optimal value function under small perturbations of given data.

We note that the LP in Theorem 4.5.1 is written in SEF. Hence, we need to transform $(\mathcal{P})$ in SEF :

$$
\begin{aligned}
\hat{z}\left(\left[P,-I_{m}\right]\right)=\quad \min \quad & \langle\bar{w}, x\rangle \\
\left(\mathcal{P}_{\mathrm{SEF}}\right) \quad \text { subject to } & {\left[P-I_{m}\right]\binom{x}{s}=P e } \\
& x, s \geq 0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

We explain the notation used in Proposition 4.5.3. Given $X \subset \mathbb{R}^{n}, Y \subset \mathbb{R}^{m}$ and a matrix $A \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times n}$, we define

$$
A(X)-Y:=\{A x-y: x \in X, y \in Y\}
$$

Proposition 4.5.3 ([24, Theorem 1]). Let $K_{1}, K_{2}$ be non-empty polyhedral convex cones in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ and $\mathbb{R}^{m}$, respectively, and let $A \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times n}$. Let $(\bar{P}),(\bar{D})$ be the following LPs :

$$
\begin{array}{clcc}
\min & \langle c, x\rangle \\
(\bar{P}) & \max & \langle u, b\rangle \\
\text { subject to } & A x-b \in K_{2}^{*} \\
& x \in K_{1},
\end{array} \quad(\bar{D}) \quad \text { subject to } \begin{aligned}
& c-A^{T} u \in K_{1}^{*} \\
& \\
&
\end{aligned}
$$

Then, the following are equivalent.

1. The constraints of $(\bar{P})$ and of $(\bar{D})$ are regular, i.e.,

$$
b \in \operatorname{int}\left\{A\left(K_{1}\right)-K_{2}^{*}\right\} \text { and } c \in \operatorname{int}\left\{A^{T}\left(K_{2}\right)+K_{1}^{*}\right\}
$$

2. The sets of optimal solutions of $(\bar{P})$ and of $(\bar{D})$ are nonempty and bounded.
3. There exists $\epsilon_{0}>0$ such that for any $A^{\prime}, b^{\prime}$ and $c^{\prime}$ with

$$
\epsilon^{\prime} \equiv \max \left\{\left\|A^{\prime}-A\right\|,\left\|b^{\prime}-b\right\|,\left\|c^{\prime}-c\right\|\right\}<\epsilon_{0}
$$

the two dual problems

$$
\begin{array}{rlrl}
\min & \left\langle c^{\prime}, x\right\rangle \\
\left(P^{\prime}\right) & \text { mabject to } & A^{\prime} x-b^{\prime} \in K_{2}^{*} \\
& x \in K_{1},
\end{array} \quad\left(D^{\prime}\right) \quad \begin{aligned}
& \text { mabject to }
\end{aligned} \quad c^{\prime}-\left(A^{\prime}\right)^{T} u \in K_{1}^{*} .
$$

are solvable.

The following lemma shows that regularity of the system $\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: A x \geq b, x \in \mathbb{R}_{+}^{n}\right\}$ is equivalent to Slater condition.

Lemma 4.5.4. Let $\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: A x \geq b, x \in \mathbb{R}_{+}^{n}\right\}$ be a given system of inequalities with $A \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times n}$. Assume that there exists $\hat{x}$ such that $A \hat{x}>b, \hat{x} \geq 0$. Then, the following are equivalent.
(1) $b \in \operatorname{int}\left\{A\left(\mathbb{R}_{+}^{n}\right)-\mathbb{R}_{+}^{m}\right\}$,
(2) there exists $x^{\prime}$ such that $A x^{\prime}>b, x^{\prime} \in \mathbb{R}_{+}^{n}$.

Proof. Suppose that Item (1) holds. Then, $\forall d$ with small enough $\epsilon>0$, we have $b+\epsilon d=$ $A \bar{x}-\bar{s}$, for some $\bar{x} \in \mathbb{R}_{+}^{n}, \bar{s} \in \mathbb{R}_{+}^{m}$. Taking $d$ such that $-\bar{s}<\epsilon d$ yields $b=A \bar{x}-\bar{s}-\epsilon d<A \bar{x}$. Hence, Item (2) holds.

Conversely, suppose that Item (2) holds. Then $A x^{\prime}-s=b$, for some $s \in \mathbb{R}_{++}^{m}$. Let $d \in \mathbb{R}^{m}$ with $\|d\|=1$ and let $\delta=\min _{i}\left\{s_{i}\right\}$. Define $\bar{s}:=s-\delta d$. Then we get

$$
b+\delta d=A x^{\prime}-s+\delta d=A x^{\prime}-\bar{s}
$$

We note that $\bar{s} \geq 0$, since $\delta d_{i} \leq \delta \leq s_{i}$, $\forall i$. Therefore, $\exists \delta>0$ such that $\forall d \in \mathbb{R}^{m}$ with $\|d\|=1$, we have

$$
b+\delta d=A x^{\prime}-\bar{s}, x \geq 0, \bar{s} \geq 0
$$

Hence, $b \in \operatorname{int}\left\{A\left(\mathbb{R}_{+}^{n}\right)-\mathbb{R}_{+}^{m}\right\}$, so Item (1) holds.
Remark 4.5.5 states that a regular system (defined in Item 1 of Proposition 4.5.3) of inequalities $\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: A x \geq b, x \in \mathbb{R}_{+}^{n}\right\}$ remains regular after being transformed into constraints of SEF.

Remark 4.5.5. Given $A \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times n}$ and $b \in \mathbb{R}^{m}$, we define two systems

$$
\begin{aligned}
& S_{1}:=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: A x \geq b, x \in \mathbb{R}_{+}^{n}\right\}, \text { and } \\
& S_{2}:=\left\{\binom{x}{s} \in \mathbb{R}^{n} \times \mathbb{R}^{m}: A x-s=b, x \in \mathbb{R}_{+}^{n}, s \in \mathbb{R}_{+}^{m}\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

System $S_{1}$ is regular if, and only if, system $S_{2}$ is regular.

Proof. If system $S_{2}$ is regular, we have

$$
b \in \operatorname{int}\left\{[A, \quad-I]\left[\begin{array}{l}
\mathbb{R}_{+}^{n}  \tag{4.5.1}\\
\mathbb{R}_{+}^{m}
\end{array}\right]-\left(\mathbb{R}^{m}\right)^{*}\right\}=\operatorname{int}\left\{A\left(\mathbb{R}_{+}^{n}\right)-\mathbb{R}_{+}^{m}\right\}
$$

We note that (4.5.1) is equivalent to Item (1) stated in Lemma 4.5.4.

We note that our systems $\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: P x \geq P e, x \geq 0\right\}$ and $\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{m}: P^{T} y \leq \bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\}$ have points $\hat{x}, \hat{y}$ such that $P \hat{x}>P e, \hat{x} \geq 0$ and $P^{T} \hat{y}<\bar{w}, \hat{y} \geq 0$ by Lemma 3.2.5 and the construction of cone $(\mathcal{C})$. Hence, by Lemma 4.5.4,

$$
P e \in \operatorname{int}\left\{P\left(\mathbb{R}_{+}^{n}\right)-\mathbb{R}_{+}^{m}\right\} \text { and } \bar{w} \in \operatorname{int}\left\{P^{T}\left(\mathbb{R}_{+}^{m}\right)+\mathbb{R}_{+}^{n}\right\}
$$

are satisfied. By Remark 4.5.5, we have that the constraint system of ( $\mathcal{P}_{\text {SEF }}$ ) and its dual are regular. Thus, by Proposition 4.5.3, $\exists \epsilon_{0}>0$ such that $\forall\left[P^{\prime}, J^{\prime}\right] \in \operatorname{Ball}\left(\left[P,-I_{m}\right], \epsilon_{0}\right)$, the primal ( $\mathcal{P}_{\text {SEF }}$ ) and its dual are solvable (Note that we do not perturb the RHS nor the objective.). Therefore we have

$$
\left[P^{\prime}, J^{\prime}\right] \in \operatorname{dom}(\hat{z}), \forall\left[P^{\prime}, J^{\prime}\right] \in \operatorname{Ball}\left(\left[P,-I_{m}\right], \epsilon_{0}\right)
$$

and the hypothesis (1) of Theorem 4.5.1 holds with $(\mathcal{P})$.
Now we check that the hypothesis (2) of Theorem 4.5 .1 holds with ( $\mathcal{P}$ ). It is shown in $\left[8\right.$, Theorem 4.3] ${ }^{2}$ that given an $\mathbf{L P}$ satisfying the regularity condition, the optimal value function is locally Lipschitz near the given data. Thus the hypotheses of Theorem 4.5.1 are satisfied and we are ready to apply Theorem 4.5.1 to $(\mathcal{R}(0))$.

Applying Theorem 4.5.1 to $(\mathcal{R}(0))$ in SEF gives

$$
\partial \hat{z}\left(\left[P,-I_{m}\right]\right)=\operatorname{conv}\left\{-y\left(x^{T}, s^{T}\right):(x ; s), y \text { optimal solutions to primal-dual pair }\right\} .
$$

Since $(\mathcal{P})$ has the unique optimal solution $x^{*}=e$, the optimal solution to ( $\mathcal{P}_{\text {SEF }}$ ) is $\left(x^{*} ; s^{*}\right)=(e ; 0)$. Then, $\partial \hat{z}\left(\left[P,-I_{m}\right]\right)$ reduces to

$$
\partial \hat{z}\left(\left[P,-I_{m}\right]\right)=\operatorname{conv}\left\{-\left[y e^{T}, O_{m \times m}\right]: y \text { optimal solution to }(\mathcal{D P})\right\}
$$

We recall that there are more than one optimal solutions to dual ( $\mathcal{D P}$ ) by Item 4 of Lemma 4.2.1. That is, $\partial \hat{z}\left(\left[P,-I_{m}\right]\right)$ is not a singleton. We also recall that if $\partial f(x)$ is not a singleton, then $f$ is not continuously differentiable, by the contrapositive of Lemma 2.2.8. Hence, $\hat{z}$ is not differentiable in regards to matrix perturbations, in general. However, with the direction of perturbations we are interested, we may obtain some partial knowledge on the sensitivity of the optimal value function $\hat{z}$ of $\left(\mathcal{P}_{\mathrm{SEF}}\right)$.

We note that the constraint matrix of $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon))$ in SEF is given by

$$
\left[\begin{array}{ll}
P-\epsilon E, & -I
\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
P & -I
\end{array}\right]+\epsilon\left[\begin{array}{ll}
-E & O
\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times(n+m)}
$$

That is, we want to perturb the matrix $\left[P,-I_{m}\right]$ in the direction $[-E, O] \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times(n+m)}$.
We recall from Proposition 2.2.7 that the generalized gradient of a function $f$ at $x$ in direction $v$ is given by

$$
f^{\circ}(x ; v)=\max \{\langle\xi, v\rangle: \xi \in \partial f(x)\} .
$$

[^4]Hence, the generalized gradient of a function $\hat{z}$ at $\left[P,-I_{m}\right]$ in the direction $[-E, O]$ is given by

$$
\begin{align*}
\hat{z}^{\circ}\left(\left[P,-I_{m}\right] ;[-E, O]\right) & =\max \left\{\left\langle-\left[y e^{T}, O_{m \times m}\right],[-E, O]\right\rangle: y \text { optimal solution to }(\mathcal{D P})\right\} \\
& =\max \left\{y^{T} E e^{n}: y \text { optimal solution to }(\mathcal{D P})\right\} \\
& =\max \left\{n\left\langle y, e^{m}\right\rangle: y \text { optimal solution to }(\mathcal{D P})\right\} \tag{4.5.2}
\end{align*}
$$

The first equality in (4.5.2) holds by Theorem 4.5 .1 and the uniqueness of the primal optimal solution. By observing (4.5.2), we see that the sensitivity of the optimal value function $\hat{z}$ highly depends on the optimal solutions of dual ( $\mathcal{D P}$ ). In Section 4.5.2, we show that the directional derivative of $\psi(\epsilon)$ at $\epsilon=0$ in the direction $1 \in \mathbb{R}$ (positive direction) coincides with (4.5.2).

Remark 4.5.6. In the nondegenerate case, we may use Theorem 4.5.1 and get the total derivative of $\hat{z}$. We note that the total derivative of $\hat{z}\left(P^{\prime}\right)$, where $P^{\prime}=\left[P,-I_{n}\right]$, can be written as

$$
d \hat{z}\left(P^{\prime}\right)=\sum_{i, j} \frac{\partial \hat{z}\left(P^{\prime}\right)}{\partial p_{i j}^{\prime}} d p_{i j}^{\prime}
$$

Since

$$
d p_{i j}^{\prime}= \begin{cases}-1, & \forall i \in\{1, \ldots, n\}, j \in\{1, \ldots, n\} \\ 0, & \forall i \in\{1, \ldots, n\}, j \in\{n+1, \ldots 2 n\}\end{cases}
$$

the result coincides with the nondegenerate case.

### 4.5.2 The Directional Differentiability of $\psi(\epsilon)$

We have shown, in Section 4.5.1, that the optimal value function $\hat{z}$ might not be differentiable at $\left[P,-I_{m}\right]$. That is, the optimal value function $\psi(\epsilon)$ might not be differentiable at $\epsilon=0$. However, we note that we are interested in the domain of $\psi(\epsilon)$ that is positive real number, i.e., $\epsilon \in(0, \bar{\epsilon})$, for some $\bar{\epsilon}>0$. Hence, we turn our attention to the directional differentiability of $\psi(\epsilon)$, rather than the differentiability of $\psi(\epsilon)$ at $\epsilon=0$. In this section, we show that $\psi$ is directionally differentiable in direction of 1 , that is,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{\epsilon \downarrow 0} \frac{\psi(\epsilon)-\psi(0)}{\epsilon} \quad \text { exsits. } \tag{4.5.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Fiacco [11, Section 2.3] and Still [29, Chapter 7] contain the related result presented in this section. We want to show (4.5.3) by getting an upper bound (limsup) and a lower bound (liminf), and claim that the upper bound and the lower bound are equal.

We recall that the robust counterpart of $(\mathcal{P})$ is given by

$$
(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon)) \quad \psi(\epsilon)=\min \{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle:(P-\epsilon E) x \geq P e, x \geq 0\}
$$

We may write $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon))$ as

$$
\begin{array}{lll} 
& \psi(\epsilon)=\quad \min & \langle\bar{w}, x\rangle \\
(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon)) & \text { subject to } \begin{array}{l} 
\\
\\
\\
\\
\\
\\
\\
g_{i}(x, \epsilon) \leq 0, \quad \forall i=1, \ldots, m \\
\end{array}(\forall i=m+1, \ldots, m+n,
\end{array}
$$

where

$$
\begin{array}{lll}
g_{i}(x, \epsilon):=-\left(p^{i}\right)^{T} x+\epsilon e^{T} x+\left(p^{i}\right)^{T} e, & \forall i=1, \ldots m, \\
g_{i}(x, \epsilon):=-x_{i}, & \forall i=m+1, \ldots, m+n,
\end{array}
$$

(We may omit $\epsilon$ in the input of $g_{i}(x, \epsilon), \forall i=m+1, \ldots, m+n$.). Let

$$
S(\epsilon):=\operatorname{Argmin}\{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle:(P-\epsilon E) x \geq P e, x \geq 0\},
$$

i.e., the set of optimal solutions of $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon))$. We recall that $S(0)=\{e\}$ by Item 2 of Lemma 4.2.1. Let $I(x)$ be the set of indices such that $g_{i}(x, \epsilon)$ is active at $x$. We note that at the optimal solution $x^{*}$ of $(\mathcal{R}(0))$, the set of active indices is $I\left(x^{*}\right)=\{1, \ldots, m\}$. Then the Lagrangian of $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon))$ near $\left(x^{*}, \epsilon\right)=(e, 0)$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
L(x, \epsilon, y)=\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle+\sum_{i=1}^{m} y_{i} g_{i}(x, \epsilon) . \tag{4.5.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Theorem 4.5.7 gives an upper bound for (4.5.3).
Theorem 4.5.7. Given a family of $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon))$, for small $\epsilon>0$, let $\psi(\epsilon)$ be the optimal value function of $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon))$. Let $M$ be the set of optimal solutions of $(\mathcal{D P})$. Then, we have

$$
\limsup _{\epsilon \downarrow 0} \frac{\psi(\epsilon)-\psi(0)}{\epsilon} \leq \max \{n\langle e, y\rangle: y \in M\} .
$$

Proof. Consider the LP

$$
\begin{array}{rll}
\left(P^{+}\right) \quad v^{+}=\min _{\xi} & \langle\bar{w}, \xi\rangle \\
& \text { subject to } & \left(p^{i}\right)^{T} \xi \geq n, \forall i=1, \ldots, m .
\end{array}
$$

Then, the dual $\left(D^{+}\right)$of $\left(P^{+}\right)$is

$$
\begin{array}{cl}
\max _{y} & n\langle e, y\rangle \\
\left(D^{+}\right) \quad \text { subject to } & P^{T} y=\bar{w} \\
& y \geq 0 .
\end{array}
$$

We note that the set of feasible solutions to $\left(D^{+}\right)$is $M$, i.e., the set of optimal solutions to $(\mathcal{D P})$ (See Item 1 of Lemma 4.2.1.). Since $\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C})=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: P x \geq 0\right\}$ is a fulldimensional cone, there exists a vector $\bar{\xi}$ such that $P \bar{\xi}>0$. Hence, we know that there exist feasible solutions to $\left(P^{+}\right)$and $\left(D^{+}\right)$. Thus, by strong duality (See Proposition 2.3.5.),
we have

$$
v^{+}=\max \{n\langle e, y\rangle: y \in M\}
$$

Let $\xi^{*}$ be a minimizer of $\left(P^{+}\right)$. Let $\bar{x}$ be the optimal solution to $(\mathcal{R}(0))$. Define, for small $\delta>0$ and $\epsilon>0$,

$$
x_{\epsilon}:=\bar{x}+\epsilon\left(\xi^{*}+\delta \bar{\xi}\right) .
$$

Then, for $i \in I(\bar{x})=\{1, \ldots, m\}$ and for small $\epsilon>0$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
g_{i}\left(x_{\epsilon}, \epsilon\right) & =g_{i}\left(x_{\epsilon}, \epsilon\right)-g_{i}(\bar{x}, 0) \\
& =\left\langle-p^{i}, \bar{x}+\epsilon\left(\xi^{*}+\delta \bar{\xi}\right)\right\rangle+\epsilon\left\langle e, \bar{x}+\epsilon\left(\xi^{*}+\delta \bar{\xi}\right)\right\rangle+\left(p^{i}\right)^{T} e+\left(p^{i}\right)^{T} \bar{x}-\left(p^{i}\right)^{T} e \\
& =\epsilon\left\langle-p^{i}, \xi^{*}+\delta \bar{\xi}\right\rangle+\epsilon\langle e, \bar{x}\rangle+\epsilon^{2}\left\langle e, \xi^{*}+\delta \bar{\xi}\right\rangle \\
& =\epsilon\left[\left\langle-p^{i}, \xi^{*}+\delta \bar{\xi}\right\rangle+\langle e, \bar{x}\rangle\right]+o(\epsilon) . \tag{4.5.5}
\end{align*}
$$

The first equality holds since $g_{i}(\bar{x}, 0)=0, \forall i \in I(\bar{x})$. Then, by dividing both sides of (4.5.5) by $\epsilon$, we get

$$
\begin{array}{rlr}
g_{i}\left(x_{\epsilon}, \epsilon\right) / \epsilon & =\left\langle-p^{i}, \xi^{*}+\delta \bar{\xi}\right\rangle+\langle e, \bar{x}\rangle+o(\epsilon) / \epsilon \\
& =\left\langle-p^{i}, \xi^{*}\right\rangle+\langle e, \bar{x}\rangle+\left\langle-p^{i}, \delta \bar{\xi}\right\rangle+o(\epsilon) / \epsilon \\
& =\left\langle-p^{i}, \xi^{*}\right\rangle+n+\delta\left\langle-p^{i}, \bar{\xi}\right\rangle+o(\epsilon) / \epsilon \\
& \leq \delta\left\langle-p^{i}, \bar{\xi}\right\rangle+o(\epsilon) / \epsilon & \text { by the feasibility of } \xi^{*} \text { to }\left(P^{+}\right) \\
& <0 & \text { since } P \bar{\xi}>0 .
\end{array}
$$

Hence, $x_{\epsilon}$ is a feasible solution to $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon))$, and this implies that $\psi(\epsilon) \leq\left\langle\bar{w}, x_{\epsilon}\right\rangle$. Thus we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\psi(\epsilon)-\psi(0) & \leq\left\langle\bar{w}, x_{\epsilon}\right\rangle-\langle\bar{w}, \bar{x}\rangle \quad \text { since } \psi(0)=\langle\bar{w}, \bar{x}\rangle \\
& =\left\langle\bar{w}, \bar{x}+\epsilon\left(\xi^{*}+\delta \bar{\xi}\right)\right\rangle-\langle\bar{w}, \bar{x}\rangle \\
& =\left\langle\bar{w}, \epsilon\left(\xi^{*}+\delta \bar{\xi}\right)\right\rangle \\
& =\epsilon\left\langle\bar{w}, \xi^{*}\right\rangle+\epsilon \delta\langle\bar{w}, \bar{\xi}\rangle .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\psi(\epsilon)-\psi(0)}{\epsilon} & \leq\left\langle\bar{w}, \xi^{*}\right\rangle+\delta\langle\bar{w}, \bar{\xi}\rangle \\
& =v^{+}+\delta\langle\bar{w}, \bar{\xi}\rangle .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $\delta>0$ can be chosen arbitrarily small, we have

$$
\limsup _{\epsilon \downarrow 0} \frac{\psi(\epsilon)-\psi(0)}{\epsilon} \leq \max \{n\langle e, \mu\rangle: \mu \in M\} .
$$

We observe in the proof of Theorem 4.5.7 that getting an upper bound of (4.5.3) does not require any argument on convexity (other than strong duality of $\left(P^{+}\right)$and $\left(D^{+}\right)$.). However, obtaining a lower bound of (4.5.3) requires the convexity status.

Theorem 4.5.8. Given a family of $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon))$, for small $\epsilon>0$, let $\psi(\epsilon)$ be the optimal value
function of $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon))$. Let $M$ be the set of optimal solutions of $(\mathcal{D P})$. Then, we have

$$
\liminf _{\epsilon \downarrow 0} \frac{\psi(\epsilon)-\psi(0)}{\epsilon} \geq \max \{n\langle e, \mu\rangle: \mu \in M\}
$$

Proof. Let $x_{\ell}$ be an optimal solution to $\left(\mathcal{R}\left(\epsilon_{\ell}\right)\right)$ for small $\epsilon_{\ell}>0$. Such optimal solutions exist, since the constraints systems of $(\mathcal{P})$ and $(\mathcal{D P})$ are regular, and for any small perturbations $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon))$ is solvable by Proposition 4.5.3. Let $\left\{x_{\ell}\right\} \subset \mathbb{R}^{n}$ and $\left\{\epsilon_{\ell}\right\} \subset \mathbb{R}$ be sequences such that $x_{\ell} \in S\left(\epsilon_{\ell}\right)$, converging to $\bar{x} \in S(0)$ and $\epsilon_{\ell} \downarrow 0$.

We recall the Lagrangian near $(e, 0)$ defined in (4.5.4). Since $\bar{x}$ is the optimal solution to ( $\mathcal{R}(0)$ ), we have $\nabla_{x} L(\bar{x}, 0, y)=0, \forall y \in M$. Since $L(\bar{x}, 0, y)$ is linear (convex) with respect to $x, \nabla_{x} L(\bar{x}, 0, y)=0$ implies that $\bar{x}$ is a global minimizer of $L(x, 0, y)$, for each $y \in M$. Hence, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
L\left(x_{\ell}, \epsilon_{\ell}, y\right)-L\left(x_{\ell}, 0, y\right) & \leq L\left(x_{\ell}, \epsilon_{\ell}, y\right)-L(\bar{x}, 0, y) \\
& =\left\langle w, x_{\ell}\right\rangle-\langle w, \bar{x}\rangle+\sum_{i \in I(\bar{x})} y_{i}\left(g_{i}\left(x_{\ell}, \epsilon_{\ell}\right)-g_{i}(\bar{x}, 0)\right)  \tag{4.5.6}\\
& \leq\left\langle w, x_{\ell}\right\rangle-\langle w, \bar{x}\rangle \\
& =\psi\left(\epsilon_{\ell}\right)-\psi(0)
\end{align*}
$$

The first inequality in (4.5.6) holds since $\bar{x}$ is a global minimizer. The second inequality in (4.5.6) holds since $g_{i}\left(x_{\ell}, \epsilon_{\ell}\right) \leq 0$ and $g_{i}(\bar{x}, 0)=0, \forall i \in I(\bar{x})$. Thus we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
\psi\left(\epsilon_{\ell}\right)-\psi(0) & \geq L\left(x_{\ell}, \epsilon_{\ell}, y\right)-L\left(x_{\ell}, 0, y\right) \\
& =\sum_{i \in I(\bar{x})} y_{i}\left(-\left(p^{i}\right)^{T} x_{\ell}+\epsilon_{\ell} e^{T} x_{\ell}+\left(p^{i}\right)^{T} e\right)-\sum_{i \in I(\bar{x})} y_{i}\left(-\left(p^{i}\right)^{T} x_{\ell}+\left(p^{i}\right)^{T} e\right) \\
& =\sum_{i \in I(\bar{x})} y_{i} \epsilon_{\ell} e^{T} x_{\ell} \\
& =\epsilon_{\ell} e^{T} x_{\ell} \sum_{i \in I(\bar{x})} y_{i} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Dividing the above by $\epsilon_{\ell}>0$ gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\psi\left(\epsilon_{\ell}\right)-\psi(0)}{\epsilon_{\ell}} \geq e^{T} x_{\ell} \sum_{i \in I(\bar{x})} y_{i} \tag{4.5.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Letting $l \rightarrow \infty$ in (4.5.7) yields

$$
\lim _{l \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\psi\left(\epsilon_{\ell}\right)-\psi(0)}{\epsilon_{\ell}} \geq \lim _{l \rightarrow \infty} e^{T} x_{\ell} \sum_{i \in I(\bar{x})} y_{i}
$$

which implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\liminf _{\epsilon \downarrow 0} \frac{\psi(\epsilon)-\psi(0)}{\epsilon} \geq e^{T} \bar{x} \sum_{i \in I(\bar{x})} y_{i}=n\langle e, y\rangle . \tag{4.5.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since (4.5.8) holds for each $y \in M$, we have

$$
\liminf _{\epsilon \downarrow 0} \frac{\psi(\epsilon)-\psi(0)}{\epsilon} \geq \max \{n\langle e, y\rangle: y \in M\}
$$

We are now ready to show directional differentiability of $\psi(\epsilon)$. With Theorem 4.5.7 and Theorem 4.5.8, we have

$$
\max _{y \in M} n\langle e, y\rangle \leq \liminf _{\epsilon \downarrow 0} \frac{\psi(\epsilon)-\psi(0)}{\epsilon} \leq \limsup _{\epsilon \downarrow 0} \frac{\psi(\epsilon)-\psi(0)}{\epsilon} \leq \max _{y \in M} n\langle e, y\rangle
$$

where $M$ is the set of optimal solutions of $(\mathcal{D P})$. Therefore, $\lim _{\epsilon \downarrow 0} \frac{\psi(\epsilon)-\psi(0)}{\epsilon}$ exists and is equal to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi^{\prime}(0 ; 1)=\lim _{\epsilon \downarrow 0} \frac{\psi(\epsilon)-\psi(0)}{\epsilon}=\max _{y \in M} n\langle e, y\rangle . \tag{4.5.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

We note that (4.5.9) coincides with (4.5.2).

### 4.5.3 The Sensitivity of the Optimal Value Functions $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ and $\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$

In this section, we show the sensitivity of the robust optimal value functions $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ and $\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$ using the result obtained in Section 4.5.2, precisely the equality (4.5.9).

Given two $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, P))$ and $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, Q))$, we now compare the values of directional derivatives of $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ and $\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$, as $\epsilon \downarrow 0$.

Theorem 4.5.9. Given two $\boldsymbol{L P s}(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, P))$ and $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, Q))$ and their optimal value functions $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ and $\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$, respectively, we have

$$
\psi_{P}(\epsilon)>\psi_{Q}(\epsilon), \forall \operatorname{small} \epsilon>0
$$

Proof. Let $M_{P}$ and $M_{Q}$ be the set of optimal solutions:
$M_{P}:=\operatorname{Argmax}\left\{\langle P e, y\rangle: P^{T} y \leq \bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\}$, and $M_{Q}:=\operatorname{Argmax}\left\{\langle Q e, y\rangle: Q^{T} y \leq \bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\}$.
Then, by Item 1 of Lemma 4.2.1, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& M_{P}=\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{m}: P^{T} y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\} \\
& M_{Q}=\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{m}: Q^{T} y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

Then, (4.5.9) leads to

$$
\begin{aligned}
\psi_{P}^{\prime}(0 ; 1) & =\max \left\{n\langle e, y\rangle: y \in M_{P}\right\} \\
\psi_{Q}^{\prime}(0 ; 1) & =\max \left\{n\langle e, y\rangle: y \in M_{Q}\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

By Lemma 3.2.10, we have

$$
\psi_{P}^{\prime}(0 ; 1)=\max \left\{n\langle e, y\rangle: y \in M_{P}\right\}>\max \left\{n\langle e, y\rangle: y \in M_{Q}\right\}=\psi_{Q}^{\prime}(0 ; 1)
$$

This yields

$$
0<c:=\psi_{P}^{\prime}(0 ; 1)-\psi_{Q}^{\prime}(0 ; 1)=\lim _{\epsilon \downarrow 0} \frac{\psi_{P}(\epsilon)-\psi_{P}(0)}{\epsilon}-\lim _{\epsilon \downarrow 0} \frac{\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)-\psi_{Q}(0)}{\epsilon}
$$

Then, we have

$$
\lim _{\epsilon \downarrow 0} \frac{\psi_{P}(\epsilon)-\psi_{P}(0)-\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)+\psi_{Q}(0)}{\epsilon}=c
$$

Thus, with $\psi_{P}(0)=\psi_{Q}(0)$, we obtain

$$
\forall \bar{\epsilon}>0, \exists \delta>0 \text { such that } 0<\epsilon<\delta \Longrightarrow\left|\frac{\psi_{P}(\epsilon)-\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)}{\epsilon}-c\right|<\bar{\epsilon}
$$

This implies that for $\bar{\epsilon}$ satisfying $0<\bar{\epsilon}<c$, we have

$$
-\bar{\epsilon}+c<\frac{\psi_{P}(\epsilon)-\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)}{\epsilon}<\bar{\epsilon}+c \Longrightarrow 0<\epsilon(-\bar{\epsilon}+c)<\psi_{P}(\epsilon)-\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)
$$

Therefore, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{P}(\epsilon)>\psi_{Q}(\epsilon), \forall \text { small } \epsilon>0 \tag{4.5.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

as desired.

This implies that the robust optimal value is more sensitive if the given LP has a smaller feasible region near the nominal optimal solution. We note that the result given in (4.5.10) is the same as the one in (4.4.20).

### 4.5.4 A Sufficient Condition for Differentiability of $\psi(\epsilon)$ at $\epsilon=0$

We showed that $\psi(\epsilon)$ is differentiable near 0 , if $(\mathcal{P})$ is nondegenerate (See Section 4.4.2.). The uniqueness of dual optimal solution played a big role in terms of getting the differentiability of $\psi$. As we noted in Item 4 of Lemma 4.2.1, we do not have the uniqueness of dual optimal solutions in degenerate cases. In degenerate cases, differnetiability of $\psi(\epsilon)$ at $\epsilon=0$ may or may not hold depending on some properties of the set of optimal solutions of $(\mathcal{D P})$. In this section, we show a sufficient condition for differentiability of $\psi(\epsilon)$ at $\epsilon=0$.

In Section 4.5.2, we only considered the directional differentiability of $\psi$ in the positive direction and it is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi^{\prime}(0 ; 1)=\max _{y \in M} n\langle e, y\rangle \tag{4.5.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $M$ is the set of optimal solutions of $(\mathcal{D P})$. By observing the proofs and making necessary changes in the previous section, we can derive the directional differential of $\psi$ in
the negative direction, that is,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi^{\prime}(0 ;-1)=\max _{y \in M}-n\langle e, y\rangle \tag{4.5.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (4.5.11) and (4.5.12), we can show that degeneracy of the optimal solution of $(\mathcal{P})$ does not always imply non-differentiability of $\psi(\epsilon)$ at $\epsilon=0$. We first observe a special case in Example 4.5.10.

Example 4.5.10. Let $w^{1}=e_{1}, w^{2}=e_{2}, w^{3}=-e_{1}, w^{4}=-e_{2}$ and $\bar{w}=e_{3}$. Construct the cone

$$
\operatorname{cone}\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i=1, \ldots, 4}, \text { where } c^{i}=\cos \theta w^{i}+\sin \theta \bar{w} \text { with } \theta=\pi / 4 .
$$

Then, we have

$$
\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C})=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{3}: P x \geq 0\right\}, \text { where } P=\frac{1}{\sqrt{7}}\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
-\sqrt{3} & -\sqrt{3} & 1 \\
\sqrt{3} & -\sqrt{3} & 1 \\
\sqrt{3} & \sqrt{3} & 1 \\
-\sqrt{3} & \sqrt{3} & 1
\end{array}\right]
$$

The set of dual optimal solutions to $(\mathcal{D P})$ is given by $\bar{M}:=\left\{y \in \mathbb{R}^{4}: P^{T} y=\bar{w}, y \geq 0\right\}$. We note that for all $y \in \bar{M}$, we must have $1=\bar{w}_{3}=\langle P(:, 3), y\rangle=(1 / \sqrt{7})\langle e, y\rangle$.

From Example 4.5.10, we observe that for all $y \geq 0$ such that $P^{T} y=\bar{w}$, we must have $\langle e, y\rangle=\sum_{i=1}^{4} y_{i}=\sqrt{7}$. This implies that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max _{y \in \bar{M}} n\langle e, y\rangle=-\max _{y \in \bar{M}}-n\langle e, y\rangle \Longrightarrow \psi^{\prime}(0 ; 1)=-\psi^{\prime}(0 ;-1) . \tag{4.5.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence, the change of optimal value of $\psi(\epsilon)$ from $\epsilon=0$ in both directions yields the same magnitude of change. Thus, when (4.5.13) occurs, we must have the differentiability of $\psi(\epsilon)$ at $\epsilon=0$. From this observation, we conclude a sufficient condition for the differentiability of $\psi(\epsilon)$ at $\epsilon=0$.

Theorem 4.5.11. Given $(\mathcal{P})$ and its dual $(\mathcal{D P})$, let $M$ be the set of optimal solutions of ( $\mathcal{D P}$ ). If

$$
\sum_{i=1}^{m} y_{i}=\gamma, \forall y \in M, \text { for some constant } \gamma \in \mathbb{R}
$$

then the robust optimal value function $\psi(\epsilon)$ is differentiable at 0 .
Remark 4.5.12. We note that, in the nondegenerate case, there is only one optimal solution to (DP) (See Item 3 of Remark 4.2.1.). Therefore, Theorem 4.5.11 also applies to the case where given $(\mathcal{P})$ is nondegenerate.

## The Case of Non-differentiability

In this section, we observe an interesting phenomenon in the absence of differentiability of $\psi(\epsilon)$ at $\epsilon=0$. Given two $\operatorname{LPs}(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, P))$ and $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, Q)$ ), where $P$ is the data matrix of cone $(\mathcal{C})$ and $Q$ is the data matrix of cone $(\mathcal{D})$, we have the following:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \psi_{P}^{\prime}(0 ; 1)=\max _{y \in M_{P}} n\langle e, y\rangle>\max _{y \in M_{Q}} n\langle e, y\rangle=\psi_{Q}^{\prime}(0 ; 1)>0, \text { and }  \tag{4.5.14}\\
& \psi_{P}^{\prime}(0 ;-1)=\max _{y \in M_{P}}-n\langle e, y\rangle<\max _{y \in M_{Q}}-n\langle e, y\rangle=\psi_{Q}^{\prime}(0 ;-1)<0 . \tag{4.5.15}
\end{align*}
$$

The strict inequality (4.5.14) implies that the change of $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ at $\epsilon=0$ to the positive direction is greater than the change of $\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$ at $\epsilon=0$. The strict inequality (4.5.15) implies that the change of $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ at $\epsilon=0$ to the negative direction is also greater than the change of $\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$ at $\epsilon=0$. Therefore, the above implies that at $\epsilon=0$, the functions $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ and $\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$ do not kiss; they must cross. Figure 4.5 .1 shows an illustration of this phenomenon (Figure 4.5.1 was drawn with piece-wise linear functions for illustrative purposes. There is no guarantee that $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ is a piece-wise linear function.).


Figure 4.5.1: An illustration of two functions $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ and $\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$ : Note that two functions cross at the origin.

We make an interesting observation on $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ and $\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$ on domain $(-\bar{\epsilon}, 0)$, for some $\bar{\epsilon}>0$. We introduced the notion of optimistic counterpart in Section 2.4.2. Using (2.4.14), we can show that the optimistic counterpart of $(\mathcal{P})$ is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\min \{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle: P x+\epsilon E x \geq P e, x \geq 0\} \tag{4.5.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

We pay attention to the coefficient of the matrix $E$ in (4.5.16). We note that the optimal value function of $\mathbf{L P}$ (4.5.16) can be expressed using the optimal value function of $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, P))$, that is,

$$
\psi_{P}(-\boldsymbol{\epsilon})=\min \{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle: P x+\boldsymbol{\epsilon} E x \geq P e, x \geq 0\}
$$

Similarly, we may write

$$
\psi_{Q}(-\boldsymbol{\epsilon})=\min \{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle: Q x+\boldsymbol{\epsilon} E x \geq Q e, x \geq 0\}
$$

Hence, we observe that the optimal value functions $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ and $\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$ on the positive domain are associated with the robust counterparts while the optimal value functions $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ and $\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$ on the negative domain are associated with the optimistic counterparts.

With (4.5.14) and (4.5.15), we conclude as follows:

1. Given the robust counterparts of two $\mathbf{L P s},(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, Q))$ (with the bigger feasible region) enjoys its property more than $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, P)$ ) (with the smaller feasible region).
2. Given the optimistic counterparts of two LPs, $(\mathcal{R}(-\epsilon, P))$ (with the smaller feasible region) enjoys its property more than $(\mathcal{R}(-\epsilon, Q)$ ) (with the bigger feasible region).

### 4.5.5 The Robust Optimal Value Function $\phi(\epsilon)$

In this section, we make a brief note on the robust optimal value function $\phi(\epsilon)$ of the robust counterpart $(\mathcal{S}(\epsilon))$. A reader who wishes to recall the definition of $\phi(\epsilon)$ and $(\mathcal{S}(\epsilon))$ may refer to Section 4.2.2 and Section 4.3. We recall that we state the similar argument in Section 4.4.3 under nondegenerate cases.

From Section 4.5.1 to Section 4.5.4, we have studied the robust optimal value function $\psi(\epsilon)$ of $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon))$ under the degenerate case. We note that the argument on the optimal value function $\phi(\epsilon)$ of $(\mathcal{S}(\epsilon))$ parallels the argument in the previous sections owing to Lemma 3.2.1 (Note that Lemma 3.2.10 played an important role on getting the sensitivity result in Section 4.5.2.). Thus, by making necessary changes in the previous section, we have the following result: given two $\mathbf{L P s}(\mathcal{S}(\epsilon, C))$ and $(\mathcal{S}(\epsilon, D))$ and their optimal value functions $\phi_{C}(\epsilon)$ and $\phi_{D}(\epsilon)$, respectively, we have

$$
\phi_{C}(\epsilon)<\phi_{D}(\epsilon), \forall \text { small } \epsilon>0 .
$$

We recall that cone $(\mathcal{C})^{\circ} \supset \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})^{\circ}$ since polarization is order-reversing (See Lemma 2.1.25.). Hence, the above argument also shows that there is an interval such that the robust optimal value of a smaller feasible region is always worse than the robust optimal value of a bigger feasible region.

We also conclude the following: given $(\mathcal{Q})$ and its dual $(\mathcal{D} \mathcal{Q})$, let $M$ be the set of optimal solutions of $(\mathcal{D} \mathcal{Q})$. If

$$
\sum_{i=1}^{m} y_{i}=\gamma, \forall y \in M, \text { for some constant } \gamma,
$$

then $\phi(\epsilon)$ is differentiable at $\epsilon=0$.

We also have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \phi_{C}^{\prime}(0 ; 1)=\max _{y \in M_{C}} n\langle e, y\rangle<\max _{y \in M_{D}} n\langle e, y\rangle=\phi_{D}^{\prime}(0 ; 1), \text { and } \\
& \phi_{C}^{\prime}(0 ;-1)=\max _{y \in M_{C}}-n\langle e, y\rangle>\max _{y \in M_{D}}-n\langle e, y\rangle=\phi_{D}^{\prime}(0 ;-1) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore, $\phi_{C}(\epsilon)$ and $\phi_{D}(\epsilon)$ cross at $\epsilon=0$ (See Figure 4.5 .1 for an illustration after replacing $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ to $\phi_{D}(\epsilon)$ and replacing $\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$ to $\phi_{C}(\epsilon)$.).

### 4.6 Interpretations to the Robust Optimization Problem

In this section, we briefly summarize the arguments of the previous sections as well as how the result applies to the original robust optimization problem.

Given the vectors $\bar{w} \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$ and $\left\{w^{i}\right\}_{i=1, \ldots, k} \subset \mathbb{R}^{n}$ satisfying Hypothesis 3.1.1, we construct a family of cones so that we can control their sizes using $\theta \in(0, \pi / 2)$ (Section 3.1). We fix two distinct $\theta, \bar{\theta}$ with $\theta<\bar{\theta}$ and construct two cones:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C}):=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i \in\{1, \ldots, l\}}\right), & \text { where } c^{i}:=\cos \theta \bar{w}+\sin \theta w^{i} \\
\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D}): & =\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{d^{i}\right\}_{i \in\{1, \ldots, l\}}\right),
\end{aligned} \quad \text { where } d^{i}:=\cos \bar{\theta} \bar{w}+\sin \bar{\theta} w^{i} .
$$

We note that $\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C}) \subsetneq \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})$.
We first focus on cone $(\mathcal{C})$. With Algorithm 2.1.1 and Table 2.1.2, we find the halfspaces defining the cone:

$$
\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C}):=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: P x \geq 0\right\}
$$

We translate the cone by $e$ and obtain the following system:

$$
\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: P x \geq 0\right\}+e=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: P x \geq P e\right\}
$$

We then construct LPs using the cones constructed above along with the nonnegativity on the variables (Section 4.2):

$$
(\mathcal{P}) \quad \min \{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle: P x \geq P e, x \geq 0\}
$$

We note that the translation of the cone yields $(\mathcal{P})$ to have its unique optimal solution at $x^{*}=e$. We also note that the constraint $x \geq 0$ of $(\mathcal{P})$ may change the feasible region of $(\mathcal{P})$ but is redundant in the sense that it does not affect the optimal solution at all. The constraint $x \geq 0$ seems redundant knowing that $x^{*}=e$ is the unique optimal solution, but it plays an important role on forming a nice parametric form of robust counterpart; see (2.4.9).

Now we suppose that each entry of the LHS coefficient matrix $P$ of the constraint $P x \geq P e$ is uncertain and we are given small perturbation range $[-\epsilon, \epsilon]$ for each entry of
$P$. We then form the following robust counterpart (Section 4.3):

$$
(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, P)) \quad \psi_{P}(\epsilon)=\min \{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle: P x-\epsilon E x \geq P e, x \geq 0\}
$$

Similarly, we do the same procedure described above for $\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: Q x \geq 0\right\}$ and obtain the following robust counterpart:

$$
(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, Q)) \quad \psi_{Q}(\epsilon)=\min \{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle: Q x-\epsilon E x \geq Q e, x \geq 0\}
$$

With the robust counterparts $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, P))$ and $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, Q))$, we show in Section 4.4 (in nondegenerate cases) and Section 4.5 (in degenerate cases) that the optimal value function of a smaller feasible region yields a worse robust optimal value than the robust optimal value function of a bigger feasible region:

$$
\psi_{P}(\epsilon)>\psi_{Q}(\epsilon), \text { for small } \epsilon>0
$$

That is, the robust optimal value of a smaller feasible region is more sensitive than the robust optimal value of a bigger feasible region.

Though this thesis exploits a certain class of LPs, the arguments in this thesis give us insights on why some robust optimization problems yield very pessimistic robust optimal values. Essentially, the sensitivity of the robust optimal value function is related to the magnitude of dual optimal solutions. And the magnitude of dual optimal solutions is strongly related to the geometry near the primal optimal solution. To our knowledge, there are no existing results in robust optimization problems that involve geometric structures near the nominal optimal solutions and try to study the robustness. Again, this gives us a moment to think about what may drive the robust optimal values to become conservative.

## Chapter 5

## Numerical Result

In this chapter, we test the results presented in Chapter 4 numerically. We generated our data as presented in Section 3.1.2.

Figure 5.0.1 shows the changes in the optimal value $\psi \cong \psi(\theta)$ in (4.3.1), with respect to changes in $\theta$, i.e., with respect to changes in the size of $\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C})$. We keep $\epsilon=10^{-3}$ fixed for all instances. (Note that we can change the size of cone $(\mathcal{C})$ by making changes to $\theta$.). As we showed in Section 4.5.2, a smaller feasible region always yields a larger change in the optimal value under data uncertainty.




Figure 5.0.1: Fix $\epsilon=10^{-3}$; changes in robust optimal value $\psi(\theta)$ w.r.t. changes in $\theta$.

Figure 5.0.2 shows the changes in the optimal value $\phi \cong \phi(\theta)$ with respect to changes in $\theta$, i.e., with respect to the changes in the size of $\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C})$. We keep $\epsilon=10^{-3}$ fixed again. We note that a smaller $\theta$ means that the negative polar cone of the constructed cone is bigger (See Lemma 2.1.25.). Therefore, we see that a smaller feasible region yields a larger change in the optimal value under data uncertainty, as was shown in Section 4.5.5.

Let cone $(\mathcal{C})=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: P x \geq 0\right\}$ be constructed with $\theta=\pi / 6$, and cone $(\mathcal{D})=$ $\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: Q x \geq 0\right\}$ be constructed with $\theta=\pi / 4$. Then Figure 5.0.3 shows the change in the optimal value functions $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)$ and $\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$ with respect to the changes of $\epsilon$ from $10^{-10}$ to $10^{-2}$. We note that $\psi_{P}(\epsilon)>\psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$ from the given instances and this means that: $a$ larger given uncertainty set corresponding to a larger $\epsilon$, yields a larger change in the robust optimal value.


Figure 5.0.2: Fix $\epsilon=10^{-3}$; changes in robust optimal value $\phi(\theta)$.


Figure 5.0.3: Two cones cone $(\mathcal{C}) \subset \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D}) ;$ changes in $\psi_{P}(\epsilon), \psi_{Q}(\epsilon)$ with $\epsilon \in\left[10^{-10}, 10^{-2}\right]$.

Given cone $(\mathcal{C})$ constructed with $\theta=\pi / 6$, and $\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})$ constructed with $\theta=\pi / 4$, we have cone $(\mathcal{C})^{\circ} \supset \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})^{\circ}$ (See Lemma 2.1.25.). Figure 5.0.4 shows the changes in the optimal value functions $\phi_{C}(\epsilon)$ and $\phi_{D}(\epsilon)$ for the problems over the polar cones, with respect to the changes in $\epsilon$ varying from $10^{-10}$ to $10^{-2}$. We note that in the given intervals, $\phi_{C}(\epsilon)<\phi_{D}(\epsilon)$. As above, this means that a smaller feasible region in the nominal problem implies: a larger given uncertainty set corresponding to a larger $\epsilon$, yields a larger change in the robust optimal value.


Figure 5.0.4: two polar cones cone $(\mathcal{C})^{\circ} \supset \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})^{\circ} ;$ changes in $\phi_{C}(\epsilon), \phi_{D}(\epsilon)$ with $\epsilon \in$ [ $10^{-10}, 10^{-2}$ ].

## Chapter 6

## Conclusions and Further Notes

In this thesis, we study the special case of linear optimization to show what may affect the sensitivity of a robust optimization reformulation. In this special case, we show that the robust optimization problem with a locally smaller feasible region yields a more conservative robust optimal value than the one with a locally bigger feasible region. Following is a brief summary of the results presented throughout this thesis.

Given the vectors $\bar{w} \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$ and $\left\{w^{i}\right\}_{i=1, \ldots, k} \subset \mathbb{R}^{n}$ satisfying Hypothesis 3.1.1, we construct a family of proper cones so that we can control their sizes using $\theta \in(0, \pi / 2)$ in Section 3.1. We fix two distinct $\theta, \bar{\theta} \in(0, \pi / 2)$ with $\theta<\bar{\theta}$ and construct two cones:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C}):=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{c^{i}\right\}_{i \in\{1, \ldots, l\}}\right), \\
& \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D}):=\operatorname{cone}\left(\left\{d^{i}\right\}_{i \in\{1, \ldots, l\}}\right), \text { where } d^{i}:=\cos \theta \bar{w}+\sin \theta w^{i} \\
& \bar{\theta} \bar{w}+\sin \bar{\theta} w^{i}
\end{aligned}
$$

The cones satisfy strict containment, cone $(\mathcal{C}) \subsetneq \operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{D})$.
We first focus on cone $(\mathcal{C})$. With Algorithm 2.1.1 and Table 2.1.2, we find the halfspaces defining the cone:

$$
\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C}):=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: P x \geq 0\right\}
$$

We translate cone $(\mathcal{C})$ by $e \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$ and obtain the following system:

$$
\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: P x \geq 0\right\}+e=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}: P x \geq P e\right\}
$$

We then construct LPs using the cones constructed above along with the nonnegativity on the variables in Section 4.2:

$$
(\mathcal{P}) \quad \min \{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle: P x \geq P e, x \geq 0\}
$$

Now suppose that each entry of the LHS coefficient matrix $P$ of the constraint $P x \geq$ $P e$ is uncertain in the given perturbation range $[-\epsilon, \epsilon]$. We form the following robust counterpart $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, P))$ as in Section 4.3:

$$
(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, P)) \quad \psi_{P}(\epsilon):=\min \{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle: P x-\epsilon E x \geq P e, x \geq 0\}
$$

Similarly, we form the following robust counterpart $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, Q))$ using cone $(\mathcal{D})=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}\right.$ : $Q x \geq 0\}$ :

$$
(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, Q)) \quad \psi_{Q}(\epsilon):=\min \{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle: Q x-\epsilon E x \geq Q e, x \geq 0\}
$$

With the robust counterparts $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, P))$ and $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon, Q))$, we show in Section 4.4 (in nondegenerate cases) and Section 4.5 (in degenerate cases) that the robust optimal value function of a locally smaller feasible region yields a worse robust optimal value than the robust optimal value function of a locally bigger feasible region:

$$
\psi_{P}(\epsilon)>\psi_{Q}(\epsilon), \text { for small } \epsilon>0
$$

That is, the robust optimal value of a locally smaller feasible region is more sensitive than the robust optimal value of a locally bigger feasible region.

## Further Notes

The motivation of this thesis is to see how the sharpness of a vertex (an optimal solution) of a polyhedron impacts the sensitivity of the robust optimal value. We wish to utilize the notion of solid angle to measure the sharpness of a vertex. However there is no easy way to compute the solid angle of an arbitrary vertex of a polyhedron (For the definition of the solid angle, see [5, Section 11.1].). Given a point $\bar{x}$ in the polyhedron, computing the solid angle at $\bar{x}$ generally requires the knowledge on solid angles of all faces of the polyhedron ([5, Example 11.1] illustrates an example of the 3 -simplex.). Hence, we generate data so that we can always control the sizes of the vertex neighbourhoods of a polyhedron.

After constructing the cone, we translate the vertex of the cone to $e$ so that we have a non-homogeneous system of linear inequalities. We then impose nonnegativity on the variables. Nonnegativity of variables played an important role in terms of converting the robust counterpart into a simple parametric form. We note that the optimal solution $e$ is in the interior of the nonnegative orthant and we perform local analysis. Therefore the robust optimal solution is obtained near $e$ under small perturbations. Hence, imposing nonnegativity on the variables is not restrictive.

Throughout this thesis, we assumed that all the coefficients of the data matrix are uncertain with the perturbation range $[-\epsilon, \epsilon]$. We can also derive a similar result in the cases where only some of the coefficients of the data matrix are uncertain with the perturbation range $[-\epsilon, \epsilon]$. By making necessary changes to (2.4.4) - (2.4.9), we can show that the inequality with uncertainty

$$
\langle\tilde{a}, x\rangle \leq \beta, \tilde{a}_{i} \in\left[a_{i}-\epsilon, a_{i}+\epsilon\right], i \in \mathcal{I} \subset\{1, \ldots, n\}
$$

can be reformulated as follows:

$$
\langle a, x\rangle+\epsilon\langle u, x\rangle \leq \beta, \text { where } u \text { is a } 0-1 \text { vector in } \mathbb{R}^{n} .
$$

It follows that the robust counterpart of $(\mathcal{P})$ with some uncertain data with perturbation
range $[-\epsilon, \epsilon]$ becomes

$$
\widehat{\psi}_{P}(\epsilon)=\min \{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle: P x-\epsilon U x \geq P e, x \geq 0\}
$$

where $U$ is a 0-1 matrix. We can define the corresponding robust counterpart using $Q$ with the robust optimal value function $\widehat{\psi}_{Q}(\epsilon)$. By making a similar argument given in Chapter 4, we can show that $\widehat{\psi}_{P}(\epsilon)=\bar{y}^{T} U e$, for some dual optimal solution $\bar{y}$. It also follows that $\widehat{\psi}_{Q}(\epsilon)=\bar{z}^{T} U e$, for some dual optimal solution $\bar{z}$. Then, by Lemma 3.2.10, we have that

$$
\widehat{\psi}_{P}(\epsilon) \geq \widehat{\psi}_{Q}(\epsilon), \text { for small } \epsilon>0
$$

We note that we might lose the strict inequality above due to some 0 entries in the matrix $U$.

Similarly, if we are given an $(\mathcal{P})$ where each entry $p_{i, j}$ of the LHS data matrix $P$ is uncertain with perturbation range $\left[-\epsilon_{i, j}, \epsilon_{i, j}\right]$ (i.e., we are given a different perturbation range for each entry of $P$ ), then we may formulate the robust counterpart as follows:

$$
\widetilde{\psi}_{P}(\epsilon)=\min \{\langle\bar{w}, x\rangle: P x-\epsilon V x \geq P e, x \geq 0\}
$$

where

$$
V_{i, j}= \begin{cases}\epsilon_{i, j} / \epsilon & , \text { if } P_{i, j} \text { is uncertain with perturbation range }\left[-\epsilon_{i, j}, \epsilon_{i, j}\right] \\ 0 & , \text { otherwise. }\end{cases}
$$

We can define the corresponding robust counterpart using $Q$ with the robust optimal value function $\widetilde{\psi}_{Q}(\epsilon)$. Then, a similar argument above gives

$$
\widetilde{\psi}_{P}(\epsilon) \geq \widetilde{\psi}_{Q}(\epsilon), \text { for small } \epsilon>0
$$

## Limitations and Further Work

We have only considered a special objective vector $\bar{w}$ of an LP. One may ask 'What about any objective vector $w^{\prime} \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$ satisfying $w^{\prime} \in \operatorname{int}(\operatorname{cone}(\mathcal{C}))$ ?'. In the case of such objective vectors, a difficulty arises by Item 3 of Remark 3.2.4, i.e., we cannot guarantee that Lemma 3.2.1 and Lemma 3.2.10 hold with an arbitrary vector instead of $\bar{w}$. It will be interesting to find a condition for an objective vector that guarantees the arguments in this thesis.

In the presence of degeneracy, we do not know if the strict monotonicity of the optimal value functions $\psi(\epsilon)$ and $\phi(\epsilon)$ holds. The numerical result strongly shows that the optimal value functions are strictly increasing. However there is no guarantee that the strict monotonicity holds for nondegenerate cases.

## References

[1] C.D. Aliprantis and R. Tourky. Cones and duality, volume 84 of Graduate Studies in Mathematics. American Mathematical Society, Providence, RI, 2007. 3, 7, 8, 10, 11, 12
[2] H. Arsham and M. Oblak. Perturbation analysis of general lp models: A unified approach to sensitivity, parametric, tolerance, and more-for-less analysis. Mathematical and Computer Modelling, 13(8):79-102, 1990. vii, 27, 28
[3] B. Bank, J. Guddat, D. Klatte, B. Kummer, and K. Tammer. Nonlinear parametric optimization. Birkhäuser Verlag, Basel-Boston, Mass., 1983. 73
[4] A. Beck and A. Ben-Tal. Duality in robust optimization: primal worst equals dual best. Oper. Res. Lett., 37(1):1-6, 2009. 26
[5] M. Beck and S. Robins. Computing the continuous discretely. Undergraduate Texts in Mathematics. Springer, New York, second edition, 2015. Integer-point enumeration in polyhedra, With illustrations by David Austin. 91
[6] Aharon Ben-Tal, Laurent El Ghaoui, and Arkadi Nemirovski. Robust optimization. Princeton Series in Applied Mathematics. Princeton University Press, Princeton, NJ, 2009. 22
[7] S. Boyd and L. Vandenberghe. Convex Optimization. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 2004. 21
[8] M.J. Cánovas, M.A. López, J. Parra, and F.J. Toledo. Lipschitz continuity of the optimal value via bounds on the optimal set in linear semi-infinite optimization. Math. Oper. Res., 31(3):478-489, 2006. 74, 76
[9] F.H. Clarke. Optimization and nonsmooth analysis, volume 5 of Classics in Applied Mathematics. Society for Industrial and Applied Mathematics (SIAM), Philadelphia, PA, second edition, 1990. 16, 19
[10] M. Conforti, G. Cornuéjols, and G. Zambelli. Integer programming, volume 271 of Graduate Texts in Mathematics. Springer, Cham, 2014. 3, 10, 12, 13
[11] A.V. Fiacco. Introduction to Sensitivity and Stability Analysis in Nonlinear Programming, volume 165 of Mathematics in Science and Engineering. Academic Press, 1983. 72, 73, 77
[12] R.M. Freund. Postoptimal analysis of a linear program under simultaneous changes in matrix coefficients. Number 24, pages 1-13, 1985. Mathematical programming, I. 29, 65
[13] T. Gal. Shadow prices and sensitivity analysis in linear programming under degeneracy: state-of-the-art survey. OR Spektrum, 8(2):59-71, 1986. 27
[14] Tomá s Gál. Postoptimal analyses, parametric programming, and related topics. McGraw-Hill International Book Co., New York, 1979. Translated from the German by Geoffrey V. Davis, With a foreword by H.-J. Zimmermann. 27, 28
[15] M.J. Gisbert, M.J. Cánovas, J. Parra, and F.J. Toledo. Calmness of the optimal value in linear programming. SIAM J. Optim., 28(3):2201-2221, 2018. 28
[16] B. L. Gorissen, I. Yanikoglu, and D. den Hertog. A practical guide to robust optimization. Omega, 53:124-137, 2015. 24
[17] B. Guenin, J. Könemann, and L. Tunçel. A Gentle Introduction to Optimization. Cambridge University Press, 2014. 20, 21
[18] J.-B. Hiriart-Urruty and C. Lemaréchal. Fundamentals of convex analysis. Grundlehren Text Editions. Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 2001. Abridged version of $1 t$ Convex analysis and minimization algorithms. I [Springer, Berlin, 1993; MR1261420 (95m:90001)] and it II [ibid.; MR1295240 (95m:90002)]. 18
[19] R.A. Horn and C.R. Johnson. Matrix analysis. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, second edition, 2013. 69
[20] B. Jansen, J.J. de Jong, C. Roos, and T. Terlaky. Sensitivity analysis in linear programming: just be careful! European Journal of Operational Research, 101(1):15 28, 1997. 27
[21] B. Jansen, C. Roos, and Tamás Terlaky. An interior point approach to postoptimal and parametric analysis in linear programming report 92-21. 1993. 27
[22] D.G. Luenberger. Linear and Nonlinear Programming. Reading. Addison-Wesley, Massachusetts, second edition, 1984. 21
[23] H.D. Mills. Marginal values of matrix games and linear programs. In Linear inequalities and related systems, Annals of Mathematics Studies, no. 38, pages 183-193. Princeton University Press, Princeton, N. J., 1956. 27
[24] S. M. Robinson. A characterization of stability in linear programming. Operations Res., 25(3):435-447, 1977. 74
[25] R.T. Rockafellar. Convex analysis. Princeton Mathematical Series, No. 28. Princeton University Press, Princeton, N.J., 1970. 3, 9, 36
[26] R.T. Rockafellar and R.J.-B. Wets. Variational analysis, volume 317 of Grundlehren der Mathematischen Wissenschaften [Fundamental Principles of Mathematical Sciences]. Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1998. 28
[27] T. Saaty and S. Gass. Parametric objective function. I. J. Operations Res. Soc. Amer., 2:316-319, 1954. 27
[28] B. Simon. Convexity, volume 187 of Cambridge Tracts in Mathematics. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 2011. An analytic viewpoint. 5
[29] G. Still. Lectures on parametric optimization: An introduction. Technical report, University of Twente, Netherlands, 2018. 77
[30] J.E. Strum. Note on "two-sided shadow prices". Journal of Accounting Research, 7(1):160-162, 1969. 27
[31] J.E. Ward and R.E. Wendell. Approaches to sensitivity analysis in linear programming. Ann. Oper. Res., 27(1-4):3-38, 1990. 27
[32] D. De Wolf and Y. Smeers. Generalized derivatives of the optimal value of a linear program with respect to matrix coefficients. Technical report, Universite libre de Bruxelles, Belgium and Universite Catholique de Louvain, Belgium, 2000. 28, 29, 73

## Index

C, 38
D, 38
$E$, matrix of ones, 2
$K^{*}$, dual cone of set $K, 7$
$K^{\circ}$, negative polar cone of $K, 9$
$\operatorname{Argmax}\{(D)\}$, the set of optimal solutions to $(D), 21$
$\operatorname{Argmin}\{(P)\}$, the set of optimal solutions to $(P), 21$
$\operatorname{Ball}(0, \epsilon)$, ball cectered at 0 with radius $\epsilon$, 16,17
cone $(S)$, conical hull of set $S, 7$
cone ( $\mathcal{C}$ ), 39
cone $(\mathcal{D}), 39$
$\operatorname{conv}(X)$, convex hull of $X, 4$
$\operatorname{ext}(X)$, set of extreme points of $X, 5$
$\operatorname{int}(X)$, interior of $X, 3$
$\operatorname{null}(X)$, null space of $X, 3$
$\partial f(x)$, generalized gradient, 18
$\perp$, orthogonal complement, 3
$\phi(\epsilon)$, optimal value of $(\mathcal{S}(\epsilon)), 63$
$\psi(\epsilon)$, optimal value of $(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon)), 63$
$\operatorname{rank}(A), \operatorname{rank}$ of $A, 3$
$\operatorname{ray}(a)$, a half-line generated by $a, 8$
relint $(X)$, relative interior of $X, 3$
$\rho(A)$, spectral radius of $A, 69$
$\mathbf{L P}(\theta), 65$
$f^{\circ}(x ; v)$, generalized directional derivative, 18
C , 38
D , 38
$\mathcal{F}_{\mathcal{U}}(A, b), 22$
$\mathcal{Z}$, perturbation set, 23
$\mathbf{L P}(\mathcal{D P})$, dual of $\mathbf{L P}(\mathcal{P}), 59$
$\mathbf{L P}(\mathcal{D} \mathcal{Q})$, dual of $\mathbf{L P}(\mathcal{Q}), 61$
$\mathbf{L P}(\mathcal{P}), 57$
$\mathbf{L P}\left(\mathcal{P}_{\mathrm{SEF}}\right), \mathbf{L P}(\mathcal{P})$ in $\mathbf{S E F}, 74$
$\mathbf{L P}(\mathcal{Q}), 57$
$\mathbf{L P}(\mathcal{R}(\epsilon)), 57$
$\mathbf{L P}(\mathcal{S}(\epsilon)), 58$
base for a cone, 7
basic solution, 20
basic feasible solution, 20
basic variable, 20
basis, 20
cone, 7
dual cone, 7
finitely generated cone, 10
pointed cone, 7
pointed cone with vertex, 7
proper cone, 7
cone base, 7
conic combination, 7
conic combination, conical hull, 7
conical hull of set $S$, cone $(S), 7$
convex combination, 4
strict convex combination, 4
convex hull, 4
convex set, 4
degenerate basic solution, 20
degenerate polyhedral cone, 11
degenerate/nondegenerate basic solution, 20
directional derivative, 18
dual cone, 7
dual cone of set $K, K^{*}, 7$
dual norm, 25
extremal vector, 8
extreme direction, 9
extreme point, 5
extreme ray, 8
feasible solution, 20
finitely generated cone, 10
generalized directional derivative, $f^{\circ}(x ; v)$, 18
generalized gradient, 18
generalized gradient, $\partial f(x), 18$
interior of $X, \operatorname{int}(X), 3$
linear programming (LP), 20
locally Lipschitz near $x, 16$
matrix of ones, $E, 2$
nominal data, 22
nonbasic variable, 20
nondegenerate basic solution, 20
nondegenerate polyhedral cone, 11
nondegenerate/degenerate polyhedral cone, 11
null space of $X, \operatorname{null}(X), 3$
optimal solution, 20
optimistic counterpart, 26
optimistic feasible, 26
optimistic feasible solution, 26
orthogonal complement of $X, X^{\perp}, 3$
perturbation set, 23
perturbation set, $\mathcal{Z}, 23$
pointed cone, 7
pointed cone with vertex, 7
polar cone, 9
negative polar cone, 9
polyhedral cone, 10
degenerate polyhedral cone, 11
nondegenerate polyhedral cone, 11
proper cone, 7,36
rank of $A, \operatorname{rank}(A), 3$
ray, 8
extreme ray, 8
recession cone, 9
regular, 74
relative interior of $X, \operatorname{relint}(X), 3$
robust counterpart, 22
robust feasible, 22
robust feasible set, 22
robust optimal solution, 23
robust optimal value, 23
semi-infinite, 21
spectral radius of $A, 69$
spectral radius of $A, \rho(A), 69$
standard equality form (SEF), 20
strict conic combination, 7
strict convex combination, 4
uncertain linear programming, 22
uncertainty set, 22


[^0]:    ${ }^{1}$ The statement in [28, Theorem 8.11] is modified. The original statement is precisely: Let $A$ be a compact convex subset of $\mathbb{R}^{\nu}$ of dimension $n$. Then any point in $A$ is a convex combination of at most $n+1$ extreme points. In fact, for any $x$, one can fix $e_{0} \in \operatorname{ext}(A)$ and find $e_{1}, \ldots, e_{n} \in \operatorname{ext}(A)$ so $x$ is a convex combination of $\left\{e_{j}\right\}_{j=0}^{n}$. If $x \in \operatorname{relint}(A)$, then $x=\sum_{j=0}^{n} \theta_{j} e_{j}$ with $\theta_{0}>0$. In particular, $A=\operatorname{conv}(\operatorname{ext}(A))$.

[^1]:    ${ }^{2}$ The statement in Lemma 2.1.32 is modified. The original statement in [ 1 , Theorem 3.36] is precisely: Let a polyhedral cone $P$ is generated by the minimal set of inequalities $\left\{\left(a^{i}\right)^{T} x \geq 0: i \in 1, \ldots, l\right\}$. Aside from scalar multiples, its inequalities are precisely the ones given by any collection of the $l$ extremal vectors that generate the dual cone $P^{*}$.

[^2]:    ${ }^{1}$ Remark 3.1.15 is not used later in this thesis.

[^3]:    ${ }^{1}$ The original statement in [12, Theorem 1] was written with a maximization LP.

[^4]:    ${ }^{2}$ [8, Theorem 4.3] was stated with linear semi-infinite constraints but the statement holds with ordinary LPs as well.

